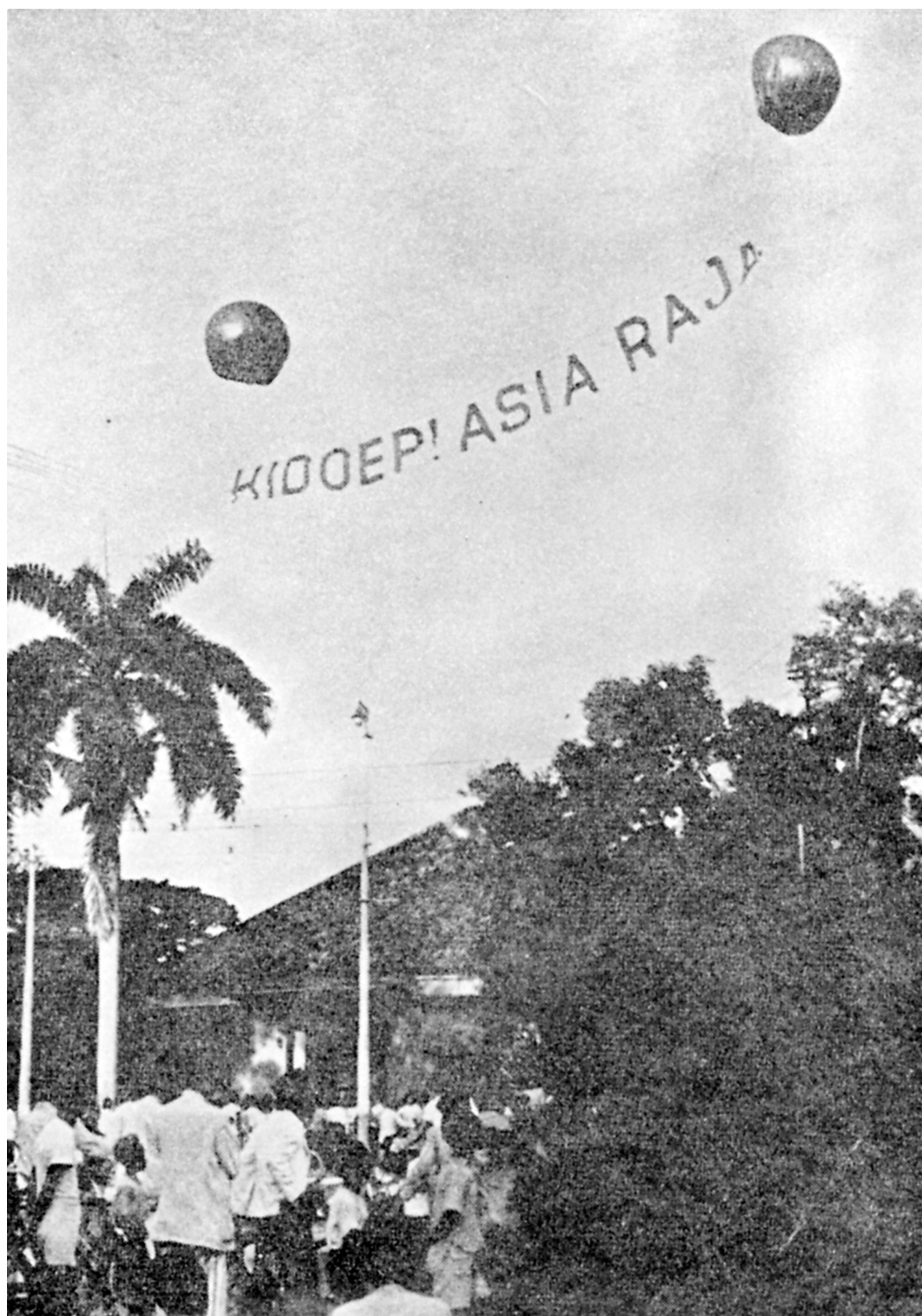




*Balloons in the Sky over Batavia, Flown by the Propaganda Group at the Time of the Java Invasion
The Brightly Colored Letters Read "Long Live Greater Asia!"*

Chapter VIII The Invasion of Java

1. Progress of the Preparations for the Invasion of Java

Thus were southern Sumatra, southern Borneo, southern Celebes and Bali captured, and Java was completely encircled. In the eastern [theater of the southern operation], Timor and, still further east, Rabaul were captured. In the western [theater], the Malay Peninsula was completely under [Japanese] control, and the advance on Rangoon had been set in motion.

In addition to such a strategically dominant position, [Japanese] air and naval forces were overwhelmingly superior [in number]. The air strength, which had been allotted to the Java invasion was 179 aircraft of the Third Air Force, 50 of the Dutch East Indies Unit and 190 of the Eleventh Air Fleet, which made a total of 419 aircraft. It was further increased by some 190 aircraft of the main force of the First Air Fleet led by Vice Admiral Nagumo, as well as by [the aircraft of] the 4th Carrier Division of the Malaya Unit, and others. The air power was overwhelming, and so was the power of the fleet. The [Japanese] naval vessels that operated against the moribund allied fleet in the Java area, which consisted of several light cruisers and lesser ships, were the battleships *Hiei*, *Kirishima*, *Kongō* and *Haruna*, the heavy cruisers *Maya*, *Takao*, *Atago*, *Myōkō*, *Haguro*, *Nachi*, *Tone*, *Chikuma* and *Ashigara*, and if we also count the light cruisers, destroyers, submarines and other vessels, we reach a truly large number of ships. What was more, in the middle of the operation to advance [on Java], the Malaya Unit had enough strength to spare to not only make a grand triumphal entry into the port of Singapore with the heavy cruiser *Chōkai* and other ships, but also to send the heavy cruisers *Kumano*, *Suzuya*, *Mikuma* and *Mogami*, and other ships to support the advance [on Java].

However, due to [the appearance of] an allied fleet, the unit to land in western Java, which had left Cam Ranh Bay on the 18th, and the unit to land in eastern Java, which had left Jolo on the 19th, temporarily reversed course on the 22d [and the next day] (which delayed the scheduled date of landing by two days) and again on the 27th (which delayed the date by another day). Furthermore, things reached such a state that the ship carrying [Sixteenth] Army Commander Imamura was sunk on the day of landing and he had to be rescued from the water. [The situation looked so serious that] during the course reversal, the Sixteenth Army staff officers even seriously discussed a plan to go ashore in Sumatra and then land on Java from Sumatra using [landing] craft.

I will describe the progress of the preparations for the invasion of Java below, focusing on how things came to this pass.

The General Situation Until Mid-February

On 1 January, the Southern Army, which sought to bring forward the Java operation, made agreements with the Southern Task Force and settled on 10 January for the landings on Menado and Tarakan, on 20 January for Kendari and Balikpapan, on 25 January for Ambon, on 30 January for Makassar and Banjarmasin, on around 6 February for Bangka and Palembang, on around 11 February for Kupang, and on around 16 February for Java.⁽²³⁾

On 5 January, the Southern Army ordered the Sixteenth Army to seize Bangka, Palembang, Ambon and Kupang.⁽²³⁾ The seizure of Tarakan, Balikpapan and Banjarmasin had already been ordered to the Sixteenth Army before the opening of hostilities.⁽²³⁾

[As for the Navy,] the Dutch East Indies Unit and the Air unit (the Eleventh Air Fleet) [ordered] the shift to phase-two operations respectively on 28 December⁽¹¹⁷⁾ and 2 January,⁽¹¹⁷⁾ but due to the delay in capturing Davao and Jolo, and because of the shortened schedule, the shift was not easy. After making arrangements with the Sixteenth Army on 6 January, the Dutch East Indies Unit postponed the [above] dates by one day each.⁽¹¹⁷⁾

Although the landings on Tarakan and Menado were carried out on 11 January,^(117, 119) it was not easy to sweep the mines in Tarakan and make the airfield ready. In addition, an impending attack by quite a number of [allied] submarines from the direction of Ambon was reported. On 15 January, the Dutch East Indies Unit issued an order to postpone [the operation to] seize Kendari and Ambon until 24 and 29 January respectively,⁽¹¹⁴⁾ and on the next day, the 16th, it issued another order to postpone [the operation to] seize Balikpapan until 24 January as well.⁽¹¹⁹⁾

By 20 January, the Dutch East Indies Unit and the Air Unit (the Eleventh Air Fleet) made a request to postpone the [entire] schedule for about two weeks, and the Malaya Unit also requested a two-week postponement, emphasizing the difficulty of [readying] the Kuching and the Ledo airfields.⁽²³⁾

Although the Southern Army was aware of these requests, it [nevertheless] issued on 20 January an order to the Sixteenth Army to "capture Java in accordance with the agreement of 1 January," and held talks with the Navy side in Manila from the next day, the 21st, through the 23d.⁽²³⁾

The draft of the Manila Agreement was concluded on 28 January,⁽¹¹⁹⁾ and it was decided that Banjarmasin was to be seized by land, and that the operation to capture Bali was to be newly included.⁽²³⁾ It was also agreed to set the invasion dates for Makassar on 9 February, for Bangka and Palembang on 10 February, for Kupang on 20 February, for Bali on 21 February, for western Java on the same day (the 21st), and for eastern Java on 23 February.⁽²³⁾

In the meantime:

1. Due to the circumstances in the Molucca Sea area, the Dutch East Indies Unit made arrangements on 19 January with the Sixteenth Army to postpone the date to launch the Ambon [operation] by another two days till 31 January.⁽¹¹⁷⁾
2. The 2d Carrier Division, which was newly added [to the Southern Task Force] on 8 January, conducted an air raid on Ambon on 23 January.⁽¹⁰³⁾
3. Landing operations were conducted in Balikpapan and Kendari on 24 January. In Balikpapan, four allied destroyers raided [the anchorage] and caused damage to the Japanese ships. Kendari could easily be seized, and it turned out to have a large airfield.^(117, 119)

4. With the progress in the transport operations in the Malaya area, the Southern Task Force gave the order to "switch to phase-three operations with the current disposition of forces" on 24 January.⁽¹¹⁷⁾
5. On the 26th, the Malaya Unit carried out the disembarkation at Endau and the occupation of the Anambas [Islands].^(118, 126)
6. On the 27th, the Kawaguchi Detachment seized the Ledo airfield.⁽²³⁾

Late in January, the Twenty-fifth Army was closing in on the Johor Strait. The next major operations were the Twenty-fifth Army's operation to seize Singapore, and the Sixteenth Army's southern Sumatra and Java operations.

Regarding the operation to capture southern Sumatra, preliminary arrangements were made between the Sixteenth Army and the Malaya Unit on 12 January^(32, 120) and they were concluded on the 15th. However, they were reconsidered at the Manila Conference. On 28 January, preliminary arrangements were made between the Sixteenth Army, the Malaya Unit and the Third Air Force,⁽³⁴⁾ and the arrangements were concluded on the 30th.⁽¹³⁵⁾ It was decided that the air force to be employed would consist of 176 naval aircraft and 138 army aircraft, which made a total of 314 aircraft.⁽⁹⁶⁾

As for the Java invasion operation, preliminary arrangements were made between the Sixteenth Army, the Third Air Force and the relevant naval units at the Manila Conference on 23 January,⁽³²⁾ and they were concluded on 30 January.⁽¹³⁵⁾ The air force to be employed consisted of a total of 419 aircraft, with the following breakdown:⁽⁹⁶⁾

Eleventh Air Fleet: 115 land-based attack planes, 70 Type-0 fighter planes, and 5 land-based reconnaissance planes.

Third Fleet: 50 reconnaissance seaplanes.

Third Air Force: 15 command reconnaissance planes, 4 army reconnaissance planes, 90 fighter planes, 20 assault planes, 20 light bombers, and 30 heavy bombers.

At that time (the end of January), the Southern Army judged the enemy position to be in outline as follows:⁽²³⁾ [See also pp. 256-257.]

1. Burma area

Apart from reinforcements of at least one division and other technical units of the [British] Indian Army, also Chiang [Kai-shek]'s Sixth Army has moved up close to the border, of which two corps have [already] entered Burma for certain. It appears that the remainder is also taking the route to enter [Burma].

It appears that the air force has been reinforced by some fifty aircraft.

2. Malaya area

An increase of one brigade of Indian troops [is known] for sure, apart from [this,] an increase of about one division of Indian troops as well as elements of British and Australian troops must be assumed.

Further, the increase in air [forces] should be over two hundred aircraft (however, a part [of them] must have been deployed in Sumatra).

3. Dutch East Indies area

Apart from a reinforcement of an estimated two ([or] three) battalions to Sumatra, [the detailed situation] is still unknown. However, up to now the arrival of large troop numbers is unthinkable.

Further, as for air force units, U.S. equipment and training personnel must have arrived in considerable numbers, but [details] remain unknown. However, the current number of aircraft is estimated to have reached about five hundred.

This information is based on the following:

1. Three thousand U.S. air personnel arrived in Java (information of 28 January and Cheng Jiemin report, degree of certainty C).
2. According to a statement of a Dutch East Indies POW pilot, the current number of aircraft in the Dutch East Indies is some seven hundred, and they are dispersed over every airfield (degree of certainty C).

The previously-mentioned Manila Conference was held from 21 to 23 January, and at that time both the Army and the Navy Departments of IGHQ and the Combined Fleet were of the same opinion as the Southern Army that a postponement [in the operation schedule] would allow Java to receive reinforcements, which would make the defense [of the island] all the stronger. The Navy Department of IGHQ and the Combined Fleet requested the Southern Task Force to not postpone the [invasion] date.⁽²³⁾ The Southern Task Force, which held the same view on the situation as the Southern Army, and which also felt responsible as a signee of the agreement of 1 January with the Southern Army, did not want to postpone the schedule either.⁽²³⁾ As we have seen, the two-week postponement requested by the Dutch East Indies Unit, the Malaya Unit, and the Air Unit (i.e. the Eleventh Air Fleet) eventually resulted in a postponement of [merely] five days for the operation against western Java and seven days for the operation against eastern Java.⁽²³⁾

Since 18 January, when the above issue of the request for a two-week postponement arose, the Southern Task Force had done everything possible, seeking to reinforce the Dutch East Indies Unit. So had the Combined Fleet; on 19 January it issued an order to add [to the unit] the 21st Destroyer Division,⁽¹¹⁴⁾ which ([consisting of] four destroyers) was employed on the Kendari – Makassar – Bali line [of operations]. During the Manila Conference, the Southern Task Force informally decided to later on transfer the *Yura*, the 11th Destroyer Division (three destroyers), and the 12th Destroyer Division (two destroyers) to the Dutch East Indies Unit [as well].⁽⁹⁶⁾ It also moved the carrier aircraft of the 2d Carrier Division onto land bases as soon as the division returned to Davao on the 25th after completing the air strike on Ambon on 24 January, and issued an order on the 28th to add the 7th Destroyer Division (three destroyers [of the Carrier Division]) [to the Dutch East Indies Unit as well].⁽¹¹⁴⁾ This destroyer division joined the Ambon – Kupang line [of operations]. On the same day, it also issued an order to transfer the 1st Section (two destroyers) of the 6th Destroyer Division of the Air Unit (the Eleventh Air Fleet).⁽¹²⁰⁾ This section joined the Cam Ranh Bay – western Java line [of operations].

As mentioned previously, on 28 January it was decided to cancel [the operation to] seize Banjarmasin by sea, but to seize Bali [instead], and a new schedule was fixed on the same day.⁽¹¹⁹⁾ For the Navy, which had believed and before the opening of hostilities had all the time insisted that [the operation to] capture Java by a clockwise route would be quicker than that by a counterclockwise route, it was unbearable to conduct the landing [operation] on eastern Java two days later than the landing on western Java, even though the current situation was the inevitable consequence of circumstances from the time right before the war.⁽¹³⁶⁾ Especially for the Dutch East Indies Unit, which had been urged on and additionally been provided with quite a number of destroyer divisions etc. by higher headquarters, and which,

moreover, had [the operation to] seize Banjarmasin by sea called off, it was intolerable.⁽¹³⁶⁾ Although [the operation against] Bali [was included] instead of that against Banjarmasin, it was to be conducted on the same day as the landing on western Java, so it was just a part of the operations to capture Java.⁽¹³⁶⁾

The Dutch East Indies Unit made efforts to bring forward the date [of the landing operation on] eastern Java to the same day as that on western Java. In concert with the Dutch East Indies Unit, the Eleventh Air Fleet also studied [the possibility of] advancing the operation. On 28 January, the Dutch East Indies Unit issued an order to change the Makassar operation to a clockwise route. On 31 January it requested the 5th Cruiser Division to bring forward the date of the Makassar [operation].⁽¹¹⁴⁾ On 1 February, the Dutch East Indies Unit ordered to conduct [the operation to] seize Makassar on 8 February by advancing it by one day,⁽¹¹⁴⁾ and [the operation to] capture Bali on 18 February by moving it up by three days.⁽¹¹⁹⁾ [The unit thought that] these changes would enable it to carry out the landing [operation] on eastern Java on the same day as that on western Java (21 February).

In the meantime, the landing [operation] in Ambon was carried out on 31 January.⁽¹¹⁷⁾ Also, the Combined Fleet passed down the order to transfer the Carrier Task Force to the Southern Task Force on the same day (the 31st).^(116, 123)

The day before the Combined Fleet issued the order to transfer the Carrier Task Force (that is, the 30th), the Air Unit (the Eleventh Air Fleet) issued the order for Operation Z and launched a full-scale air campaign on eastern Java from 3 February onwards.⁽¹⁴³⁾ It was six days before the Malaya Unit's air campaign on western Java. As of 1 February, the forces that the Air Unit (the Eleventh Air Fleet) deployed in the front line were 138 aircraft in Kendari, thirty-three in Balikpapan and seventeen in Manado.^(143, 134)

On 4 February, the second day of Operation Z, the Air Unit (the Eleventh Air Fleet) made an attack on an enemy fleet in the Java Sea and reported to "have attacked an enemy fleet of seven cruisers and five destroyers and sunk three cruisers."^(134, 143)

However, on that day, an ironical reversal [of the situation] occurred. For on that day, while the Dutch East Indies Unit and the Air Unit (the Eleventh Air Fleet), which regretted that "the landing [operation] on eastern Java was to be conducted two days later [than that on western Java]," had revised their plans and were steadily achieving results [in advancing their schedule], the Malaya Unit actually proposed a two-day postponement of L (the Bangka and Palembang operation).⁽²³⁾ [Sixteenth] Army Commander Imamura, who had arrived in Cam Ranh from Gaoxiong on that day (the 4th), held talks with [First Expeditionary Fleet] Commander in Chief Ozawa, accepted the latter's request, and sent Staff Officers Takashima, Kitamura and Oda, and Navy Staff Officer Wakatsuki [seconded to the Sixteenth Army] to the [Southern Army] headquarters to have them request a two-day postponement of [Operation] L.^(23, 32, 34)

On 6 February, again a postponement of [Operation] L by another four days was requested.⁽²³⁾ Chief of Staff Sawada and Staff Officer Tomari of the Malaya Unit, Sixteenth Army [Senior] Staff Officer Takashima, and others visited the [Southern Army] headquarters to make the request.⁽²³⁾ The last time the issue was the Ledo airfield, but this time it was the Kuantan airfield.⁽²³⁾

A postponement of L by a total of six days would inevitably lead to a postponement of [the operation against] western H (Java). Because the airfields were in such [bad] condition, the Malaya Unit had yet to launch its air campaign against Java. For the Air Unit (the

Eleventh Air Fleet), which had conducted Operation Z from the 3d through that day (the 6th), and the Dutch East Indies Unit, which on that day had dispatched from Kendari the unit to seize Makassar, the postponement could only have been totally unexpected. The Air Unit (the Eleventh Air Fleet) decided to shift the focus of its air campaign to the Banda Sea area.⁽¹⁴³⁾

On 8 February, the Combined Fleet revised its previous order (for the already-mentioned reasons) and passed down a [new] order to transfer the Carrier Task Force (minus the 5th Carrier Division) and the 2d Submarine Squadron to the Southern Task Force.^(116, 123)

Before that, on 5 February, the Southern Task Force had presented a plan to have the 2d Carrier Division conduct an air strike on Port Darwin on 17 February (the first carrier operation) and have the Carrier Task Force leave Palau on 18 February and then Staring Bay on the 23d to conduct a carrier operation in the Indian Ocean and to return to Staring Bay on 3 March after a five-day operation on the high seas (the second carrier operation), and it ordered a study of its feasibility.⁽¹¹⁶⁾ At that time, the postponement of [Operation] L was expected to be two days, and thus [the landing on] western H [Java] was also expected to be postponed by two days (that is, [the landing operations against] both eastern and western [Java] would be on the 23d.)

On receiving the aforementioned order of the Combined Fleet on 8 February, the Southern Task Force issued an order on the 9th, changing its former plan.⁽¹¹⁷⁾ By that time, it was assumed that in consequence of the request of the Malaya Unit (on the 6th) to postpone [Operation] L by another four days (six days in total), [Operation] H would inevitably be postponed by six days as well. In this order, the plan was that the entire Carrier Task Force (including the 2d Carrier Division) should be employed for the carrier operations from the beginning; that as the first carrier operation, an air strike on Port Darwin should be conducted on 19 February; and that the second carrier operation should be a five-day carrier operation in the Indian Ocean to be conducted by leaving Staring Bay at the right moment. On the day before (the 8th), based on the request of the Malaya Unit (on the 6th) to postpone L by a total of six days, the Southern Task Force had sent the Southern Army a telegram to propose to "conduct [Operation] L on day $x + 70$ (16 February), [the landing operation on] western Java on day $x + 81$ (27 February), and that on eastern Java no later than day $x + 81$, all depending upon the deliberations between the Third Fleet and the Sixteenth Army."⁽²³⁾

The Southern Army had no option but to wire back its consent.⁽²³⁾ In this way, the [temporary] situation in which a counterclockwise advance had been quicker [to reach Java] was restored to [the original] situation in which the clockwise route was quicker. The reasons for this reversal were as already described respectively in terms of the Malaya Unit, the Dutch East Indies Unit and the Air Unit (the Eleventh Air Fleet).

On the night of the 9th (the day when it passed down the orders on the carrier operations), the Southern Task Force issued the following order by telegram:⁽¹¹⁷⁾ [See pp. 305 and 379.]

Southern Task Force Telegraphic Order No. 96

2040, 9 February

The following amendments were made in the target dates for the invasions in the Dutch East Indies operation:

1. Western Java: day $x + 81$.
2. Eastern Java: no later than day $x + 81$, depending on the arrangements between the commander in chief of the Third Fleet and the Sixteenth Army commander.

However, in the afternoon of that day (the 9th), before the telegraphic order was transmitted, the prospects for the preparation of the bases and deployment of its aircraft became clear for the Malaya Unit, and it issued an order to set [Operation] L for 15 February. [Accordingly,] the units to land in southern Sumatra left Cam Ranh Bay on that evening.⁽¹¹⁸⁾ The Third Air Force had [already] launched its air operations [for Operation] L on 6 February.⁽⁹⁶⁾ On that day (the 9th), the air unit of the Malaya Unit launched its air operations [for Operation] L, including [air] assaults on western Java.⁽¹⁰⁴⁾



Chief of the 1st Bureau,
Army General Staff Of-
fice, Lt. Gen. Tanaka
Shin'ichi

On the 10th, the units to land in western Java completed their assembly in Cam Ranh Bay.⁽¹²⁰⁾ On that day, the Sakaguchi Detachment seized Banjarmasin.⁽⁸⁷⁾ Makassar (its capture date was rescheduled on 2 February to the 9th), had been seized the day before (the 9th).⁽¹²⁴⁾ The 48th Division was under sail and scheduled to arrive in Jolo on the 12th.⁽¹¹⁹⁾

The Dutch East Indies Unit, which had made arrangements with the Sixteenth Army based on the telegraphic order of the Southern Task Force, transmitted the following order on the 11th:⁽¹¹⁷⁾ [See p. 379.]

Third Fleet Classified Telegram No. 272 sent at 1150 on the 11th

1. The schedule for the Dutch East Indies invasion shall be revised as follows:
 1. Batavia and Surabaya: 26 February.
 2. Kupang and Dili: 20 February.
 3. Bali: 18 February (as scheduled).
2. Each unit shall conduct operations in line with the outline given in the Dutch East Indies Unit Classified Order No. 9 (note by the author: the order issued on 28 January), so as to meet the above schedule.

Three days earlier, Lt. Gen. Tanaka Shin'ichi, chief of the 1st Bureau (Operations Bureau) of the Army Department of IGHQ, had sent the following telegram from Saigon:⁽²²⁾

To: Vice Chief, Army General Staff

From: Chief, 1st Bureau (sent on 8 February)

1. The Sixteenth Army has completed the preparations for its plans and has an extremely high morale, which, along with the consideration of our military power as well as the enemy's shown in the engagements in the early stages of the war, has made the army highly confident about Operation H.
2. The Banjarmasin operation is progressing so smoothly that it is expected to achieve its aim by the 12th (note by the author: it was achieved on the 10th). [Banjarmasin] shall almost certainly be available as an air base by the time of H.
3. The seizure of Tanjungkarang in southern Sumatra is planned around five days before [Operation] H, and it is also expected that the aim will be achieved concerning Bali. Combined with the seizure of Banjarmasin, these will greatly facilitate the air operations.
4. In the end, L was set on day x + 70, H on day x + 81 for both the eastern and western parts, and Bali around day x + 76 (note by the author: 22 February).

That is to say, despite the telegram of the Southern Task Force on 9 February, which said “Western Java on the 27th [i.e. $x + 81$] and eastern Java no later than the 27th,” the Dutch East Indies Unit fixed [the date for the landing operation] on western Java for the 26th, according to the moving up of [Operation] L by one day, and also fixed [the date for the landing operation] on eastern Java for the 26th, endorsing the opinion of the Army, the Sixteenth Army in particular, that simultaneous landings on the eastern and western parts would be appropriate in terms of strategy.

The noteworthy points here are (1) that although the Army considered on 8 February that “[Operation] H [should be launched] on day $x + 81$ for both the eastern and western parts of Java,” the Southern Task Force ordered on the next day, the 9th, that “[the operation on] the eastern part of H [should be launched] no later than day $x + 81$,” (2) that although the Army also considered that [the landing operations on] Bali [should be conducted] around the 22d, the Dutch East Indies Unit fixed [the landing operations on Bali] “on 18 [February] as scheduled.” This indicated the Navy’s good faith. [However, because of that,] the operation to capture Bali became detached from the Java invasion operations in terms of timing, which ended up increasing the risks.

The reasons why the Dutch East Indies Unit decided [that the landing operations on Bali should be conducted] “on 18 [February] as scheduled” might have arisen from the circumstances that [the seizure of the Bali airfield] had been encouraged since 18 January, that the unit was reluctant to change an already issued order, or that in response to the eagerness of the Air Unit (the Eleventh Air Fleet), it hoped to enable the air unit to use the Bali airfield sooner and more effectively. Apart from that, it seems that [the Dutch East Indies Unit] had a [false] sense of security that it would be able to capture the island as easily as Makassar, overestimating the military gains of Operation Z.⁽¹³⁶⁾

On the 9th (the day of the seizure of Makassar), the Southern Task Force issued an order concerning the operations of the Carrier Task Force, as mentioned previously. The order contained the following information:⁽¹¹⁷⁾ [See also p. 407. A minor difference in redaction has been ignored.]

Through our air raids at the beginning of February, the enemy based on Java has lost most of its air and naval forces, and as our invasion operations progress, it is highly likely that the remaining forces will attempt to escape to Australia, India and South Africa; it is also quite likely that British, U.S., Dutch and Australian naval forces will appear in the eastern part of the Indian Ocean to pick them up.

Note: It was reported that the air operations off the coast of Java on 4 February had produced a [military] gain of sinking three cruisers. However, according to allied military history sources, no ships were sunk.

On 10 February, the Navy Department of IGHQ transmitted the following telegram to each fleet,⁽¹¹⁷⁾ but [despite this telegram] the units on site did not pay much attention to [the situation in] Java itself.⁽¹³⁶⁾

From: Chief, 1st Bureau, Navy Department, IGHQ (received at 1920 on the 10th)

JC (Bandung) sent the following report to Chongqing (sent on 6 February): [Editor’s note: Unclear whether this refers to a report from the ABDA Joint Command in Bandung, or to something else, which was intercepted by the Japanese.]

1. Allied air force
 - (1) Singapore: One squadron of British pursuit aircraft.
 - (2) Southern Sumatra: Four squadrons of British bombers and three Hurricane squadrons.
 - (3) Java: Forty Dutch East Indies bombers and two squadrons of pursuit aircraft, two U.S. squadrons of flying fortresses and two squadrons of pursuit aircraft; thirty reconnaissance aircraft and fifteen transport aircraft.
 - (4) One squadron consists of eighteen aircraft.
 - (5) Total: 190 bombers and 200 pursuit aircraft.
 - (6) Reinforcements: Two bombers [fly in] every day, and two squadrons of pursuit aircraft fly in every week after having been serviced in Australia.
2. One element of the Australian forces to be transferred to Java from the Middle East has already arrived and started reconnaissance of the terrain; the main force is expected to arrive within three or four weeks.

[However,] the attention of the [naval] units on site had mostly shifted to the Timor area.⁽¹³⁶⁾ On the 11th, the Dutch East Indies Unit passed down order(s) concerning the outline of the Timor and the Bali operations.⁽¹¹⁴⁾ On the 12th, the 21st Air Flotilla headquarters moved eastward to Ambon from Kendari.⁽¹⁴³⁾ The Carrier Task Force led by Vice Admiral Nagumo, commander in chief of the First Air Fleet, was to leave Palau on the 15th to sail southward to conduct an air strike on Port Darwin. The Eastern Detachment was to leave Ambon for Timor from the 17th onwards.

It was not until 14 February that the Dutch East Indies Unit and the Eleventh Air Fleet finally shifted their focus to Java. It (the 14th) was the day when the 1st [Paratroop] Raiding Group parachuted down in Palembang. It was inevitable that if the [Japanese] seized Palembang and Bangka (scheduled for the 15th), the allied aircraft that operated in Malaya and Sumatra would retreat to Java. [Nevertheless,] the stand-alone landing operation on Bali, which is separated from Java by just a narrow strait, would [still] be conducted on the 18th. On this day (the 14th), the 5th Cruiser Division commander wired the Dutch East Indies Unit the following request:⁽¹¹⁴⁾

As the Surabaya operation was rescheduled to the 26th, while the Bali operation is supposed to be conducted as scheduled, the interval between them has increased; and as the tasks of the transport of the construction squad, base personnel and others, and the guarding of these units on Bali have also been added, it means that during this period an extremely small force ([consisting of merely] two destroyers and three submarine chasers) will be exposed right in front of a major base of the enemy. Therefore, we would by all means like to request an arrangement that before the Bali invasion on the 18th the enemy naval vessels in Surabaya shall be searched for and attacked, and that the enemy bases on Bali, Lombok, Sumbawa, and in the neighboring areas shall be attacked as well.

On the 15th, the Dutch East Indies Unit sent the following request to the Air Unit (the Eleventh Air Fleet):⁽¹¹⁴⁾

[We] would like your cooperation in the implementation [of the request contained in] the 5th Cruiser Division Classified Telegram No. 717, to search for and attack the enemy naval vessels in the Surabaya area, and to attack key places in the neighboring areas before the [scheduled] surprise attack on Bali.

It (the 15th) was the day when the Bangka and Palembang landing operations were carried out and also the day when the Malaya Unit had deployed for a naval and air engagement with an allied fleet that had sailed northward through the Gaspar Strait.

On the next day, the 16th, the allied fleet, which had reversed its course and left on the previous day, showed no intention to counterattack. The Tanaka Detachment had already landed in Bangka and Palembang on the 15th, and the convoy of the main force of the 38th Division reached the mouth of the Musi River on that day (the 16th). On that day, the Malaya Unit reported [to the Southern Task Force]: "We have no objections if from the 21st onwards the *Yura*, the 11th and the 12th Destroyer Division and others will be transferred to the Java invasion operation."⁽¹²⁰⁾ [Also] on that day, the Air Unit (the Eleventh Air Fleet) tried to conduct an air raid on eastern Java, responding to the telegraphic request of the day before, but without success due to bad weather. [Also on that day,] the order for the Sakaguchi Detachment to participate in the Java operation was issued.

On the next day, the 17th, the unit of the Eastern Detachment to land in Kupang left the port of Ambon. The Carrier Task Force led by Vice Admiral Nagumo was sailing south, scheduled to attack Port Darwin on the 19th. On the previous day (the 16th), the Dutch East Indies Unit had ordered the postponement of the Bali invasion by one day, because it had been impossible to provide air support on the 16th.⁽¹¹⁴⁾ Accordingly, the unit for capturing Bali was scheduled to leave the port of Makassar the next day, the 18th.

However, the weather remained bad on that day (the 17th). Besides, the 21st Air Flotilla headquarters returned on that day from Ambon to Kendari.^(103, 134)

The convoy of the main force of the Sixteenth Army was to leave Cam Ranh for western Java on the following day, the 18th. [Sixteenth] Army Commander Imamura had left Saigon on that day (the 17th), reached Cam Ranh Bay, and embarked on the *Ryūjō-maru*.⁽³²⁾

However, the progress of the advance of the aircraft of the Third Air Force to the Palembang airfield was [slow,] as [seen] below:⁽¹³⁵⁾

By the previous day, the 16th: twenty Type-97 fighter planes

By this day, the 17th: twenty Type-97 fighter planes, seven Type-1 fighter planes, and two command reconnaissance aircraft

The air unit of the Malaya Unit (the 22d Air Flotilla) was in [an even worse] situation: the Ledo airfield was not fit for use, the poor condition of the Kuching airfield allowed the aircraft to load [only] half a tank of fuel on take off, while the air groups stationed far behind at the bases in Kuantan and Thủ Dầu Một in French Indochina were far too far away to be effectively employed.

As we have seen, the air unit (the Eleventh Air Fleet) had shifted its focus to the eastern [theater] after conducting Operation Z (from 3 through 5 February), and the air unit of the Malaya Unit had launched an air campaign against western Java on 9 February. The situation of the air campaign against [both eastern and western] Java from 9 February onwards was as follows:⁽¹⁰⁴⁾

9 February

Eastern Java: Seventeen land-based attack planes of the 23d Air Flotilla conducted a raid on Malang from Balikpapan.

Western Java: Sixteen fighter planes and two land-based reconnaissance aircraft of the 22d Air Flotilla conducted a raid on Batavia and also reconnoitered the city from Kuching.

10 February: No [air] raids were conducted.

11 February

Eastern Java: No [air] raids were conducted.

Western Java: Twenty-seven land-based attack planes of the 22d Air Flotilla took off from Kuantan with the intention to conduct a raid on Batavia, but they attacked [enemy] warships in Bangka [instead].

12-14 February: No [air] raids were conducted.

15 February

Eastern Java: The 23d Air Flotilla conducted a weather reconnaissance and searched for the enemy from Balikpapan.

Western Java: The full force of the 22d Air Flotilla from the Kuching, the Kuantan and the Thù Dầu Môt [airfields] attacked an allied fleet, which launched a counterattack, in the northern part of the Gaspar Strait.

16 February

Eastern Java: The 23d Air Flotilla conducted a weather reconnaissance from Balikpapan.

Western Java: No [air] raids were conducted.

17 February

Eastern Java: Twenty-five land-based attack planes of the 23d Air Flotilla took off from Balikpapan with the intention to conduct a raid on Surabaya, but they returned due to bad weather.

Western Java: No [air] raids were conducted. Land-based attack planes of the 22d Air Flotilla attacked an [enemy] fleet on the sea south of Bangka [Island] off southern Sumatra from Kuching.

[Sixteenth] Army Commander Imamura, who had boarded [the *Ryūjō-maru*] on that day, had the following conversation with the chief of the 1st Bureau of the Army Department of IGHQ, Lt. Gen. Tanaka Shin'ichi, before embarkation:⁽³⁵⁾ [See also p. 100.]

[Tanaka] "I wonder whether it is possible to dispose of the entire Java invasion [operation] within fourteen days (two weeks)?"

[Imamura] "At this moment, we have not yet departed [from port], and I cannot tell how many ships will be able to arrive and disembark while braving enemy torpedoes. What makes you think that we can complete [the operation] within two weeks?"

"A campaign needs to be ended quickly."

"I wish in my mind that we can make the enemy surrender within a month, but my conscience does not allow me to declare that we can [promise to] make it happen."

"I see. But please, finish it by '*Shunki-kōreisai*' [the vernal equinox, when the Imperial ceremony of ancestor worship is held] on 21 March."

"I will make efforts to end it at the earliest possible date. This is all I can say [now]."

At 1840 on that day (the 17th), the Southern Task Force sent the following telegraphic order to the Malay Unit:⁽¹²⁰⁾

1. As of 21 February, the disposition of forces shall be changed as follows:

(1) The *Yura*, the 11th and the 12th Destroyer Divisions, the 1st Minesweeper Division, the *Kamikawa-maru*, two auxiliary submarine chasers, two fishing boats, and the *Tsurumi* [shall be transferred] from the Malay Unit to the Dutch East Indies Unit.

- (2) The 22d Air Flotilla (minus the Mihoro Air Group), a detachment from the 21st Air Flotilla, and a detachment (minus Type-96 carrier aircraft) from the 23d Air Flotilla [shall be transferred] from the Malaya Unit to the air unit.
2. The Malaya Unit shall cooperate in the western Java invasion operation, while staying engaged in its own mission.

By this order, the strength of the escort of the convoy of the main force of the Sixteenth Army, which was to leave Cam Ranh Bay the next day, the 18th, became two light cruisers, fifteen destroyers and two auxiliary seaplane tenders from the 21st onwards. Furthermore, the order let the Air Unit (the Eleventh Air Fleet) employ the air flotillas [originally under its command] (the 21st, the 22d and the 23d Air Flotillas) together for the Java operation from the 21st onwards.

Although the convoy of the main force of the Sixteenth Army left Cam Ranh Bay on the 18th, the Mentok airfield was not yet available, and neither the airfield in Tanjungkarang nor in Bali had been seized. Also, the capacity of the Palembang airfield was limited. There was no prospect yet of advancing naval aircraft to southern Sumatra. The Third Air Force was still directly cooperating in the Sumatra operation and had not yet launched the air campaign against Java.

The convoy took its departure neither “after gaining command of the air” nor “when the deployment of the air force was completed.” It was “a departure taken prior to the seizure and preparation of air bases.” It meant that both allied aircraft and naval vessels in Java were still operational at the time of the departure of the convoy.

On the 18th, 5th Destroyer Squadron Commander Rear Admiral Hara left Cam Ranh Bay escorting a large convoy of fifty-six ships carrying the main force of the Sixteenth Army with one light cruiser and ten destroyers. He wired the Malaya Unit (Vice Admiral Ozawa) on the same day a request to launch air attacks on enemy naval surface vessels as well as enemy aircraft on the sea west of Java.⁽¹²⁰⁾

The Advance of the Assembly Points

The unit to land in western Java (the main force of the [Sixteenth] Army with the 2d Division and the Shōji Detachment as the core) and the unit to land in eastern Java ([consisting of] the 48th Division as the core) had advanced their assembly points respectively from Gaoxiong to Cam Ranh Bay, and from Luzon to Jolo, which had been carried out roughly in the following way:

The Western Java Landing Unit

On completing arrangements with the Dutch East Indies Unit (i.e. the Third Fleet) in Manila on 23 January, [Sixteenth] Army Commander Imamura passed down his orders to the 48th Division on the next day, the 24th. He returned from Manila to Gaoxiong on the same day, where, along with the 2d Division commander, Detachment Commander Shōji, and others he made arrangements with the 5th Destroyer Squadron commander on the 27th, and passed down his orders to the main force of the [Sixteenth] Army on the 30th. On 3 February, he left Gaoxiong, flew into Cam Ranh on the 4th, and arrived in Saigon on the same day.^(31, 32, 33)

Of the 5th Destroyer Squadron, which was ordered to return to the Dutch East Indies Unit from the Malaya Unit for the Java operation, the *Natori* and the 22d Destroyer Division left Singora on 9 January and arrived in Magong on the 16th, and the 5th Destroyer Division left Singora on the 12th and arrived in Magong on the 18th.⁽¹²⁰⁾

The advance of the assembly point of the main force of the Sixteenth Army ([with] the 2d Division and the Shōji Detachment as the core) from Gaoxiong to Cam Ranh Bay was carried out under escort of the 5th Destroyer Squadron ([with] one light cruiser and eight destroyers) in the following way:⁽¹²⁰⁾

First group: twelve transport ships under escort of the *Nagatsuki* and the *Minazuki* of the 22d Destroyer Division

Departed at 1200 on 1 February and arrived at 0900 on the 6th.

Second group: seventeen transport ships under escort of the *Harukaze* and the *Hatakaze* of the 5th Destroyer Division

Departed at 1200 on 3 February and arrived at 0900 on the 8th.

Third group: eighteen transport ships under escort of the *Fumizuki* and the *Satsuki* of the 22d Destroyer Division

Departed at 1000 on 5 February and arrived at 0900 on the 10th.

Fourth group: eight transport ships under escort of the *Asakaze* and the *Matsukaze* of the 5th Destroyer Division, a high speed convoy

Departed at 1200 on 6 February and arrived at 0900 on the 10th.

The plan based on the agreement between the Southern Army and the Southern Task Force on 1 January was to leave Gaoxiong on 6 February, sail nonstop to Java and land there on the 16th. However, as a result of the Manila Conference, it was changed to advance [first] to Cam Ranh as described above, depart from the bay on the 13th, and land in Java on the 21st.^(23, 96)

The Eastern Java Landing Unit

In the plan based on the agreement between the Southern Army and the Southern Task Force of 1 January, the unit [consisting of] the 48th Division as the core was to leave Manila on 8 February and sail nonstop to eastern Java and land there on the 16th.⁽²³⁾ However, as a result of the Manila Conference, the plan was changed so that [the unit] should leave Lingayen on the 8th, arrive in Jolo on the 12th, leave Jolo on the 16th, and land on eastern Java on the 23d.⁽⁹⁶⁾ The reason for the change [of the point of departure] from Manila to Lingayen was that the Bataan Peninsula, Corregidor Island and other locations had not been seized yet. Unlike Manila, loading and embarkation were extremely difficult in Lingayen, but there was no other choice.

As for the 4th Destroyer Squadron and the 2d Base Unit, which had been preparing for [the operation to] seize Banjarmasin after the seizure of Balikpapan, it was decided that with the decision to cancel [the operation to] seize Banjarmasin by sea and with the Dutch East Indies Unit's shift to phase-three operations, the 4th Destroyer Squadron commander should sail to Lingayen with the flagship *Naka* and the 2d Destroyer Division (i.e. the *Murasame*, the *Samidare*, the *Yūdachi* and the *Harusame*) and escort the unit to capture eastern Java from Lingayen to Jolo, but that the 2d Base Force commander [R. Adm. Hirose Suetō] should first support the operation to seize Makassar leading the 9th Destroyer Division (i.e. the *Asagumo*,

the *Natsugumo* and the *Minegumo*) and the 1st Section of the 24th Destroyer Division (i.e. the *Umikaze* and the *Kawakaze*), and then sail to Jolo to rejoin the 4th Destroyer Squadron.⁽¹¹⁹⁾

Rear Admiral Nishimura, commander of the 4th Destroyer Squadron (aboard the *Naka*), left Balikpapan on 30 January, arrived in Lingayen on 2 February (the *Harusame* arrived from Davao [later] on the 3d), and made the previously mentioned arrangements with the 48th Division commander in Manila on the 4th.⁽¹¹⁹⁾ [See pp. 237-240.]

On 8 January, the 48th Division had been relieved on the Bataan front by the 65th Brigade and was assembling in Manila. Then, on 24 January, the division received the above-mentioned order of the Sixteenth Army commander concerning the Java operation, started moving from Manila to Lingayen Gulf on 26 January, and set about embarking from 30 January onwards.^(31, 79) On 4 February, [48th] Division Commander Tsuchihashi made arrangements with 4th Destroyer Squadron Commander Nishimura in Manila, left the city on the 5th, embarked on the *Arizona-maru* at Damortis that evening, and passed down his orders concerning the division's Java operations on the 6th.^(79, 119)

Note: When transferring troops and war matériel [of the division] from Manila to Lingayen by shuttle motor vehicles, [48th] Division Commander Tsuchihashi transported war matériel of the Third Southern Expeditionary Fleet ([assigned to] the Philippines) from Lingayen to Manila by loading them on the empty return vehicles, which earned him the gratitude of the Navy.

On the next day, the 7th, the Kanemura Detachment, assigned to [the operation to] capture Bali, left Lingayen Gulf in the faster ships, the *Sasako-maru* and the *Sagami-maru*.⁽⁷⁹⁾ As we have seen, the detachment sailed to Makassar and [further] headed for Bali under the escort of the 8th Destroyer Division, which had come to Jolo [for the escort] after participating in the Makassar landing operation in the wake of escorting the Eastern Detachment from Hong Kong to Ambon by way of Davao.

The convoy of the main force of the 48th Division (its distribution has been given before [see pp. 237-238]) left Lingayen Gulf on 8 February and arrived in Jolo on the 12th (one ship lagged behind and arrived on the 13th) under the escort of the light cruiser *Naka* and the 2d Destroyer Division (four destroyers) led by Rear Admiral Nishimura.⁽¹¹⁹⁾ The *Kuma* of the Third Southern Expeditionary Fleet also temporarily (from the 8th through the 12th) joined in the escort [of the convoy] on the way.⁽¹¹⁹⁾ At Jolo, the 48th Division made the final supplementary preparations for the operations. Although its departure from Jolo had been scheduled for the 16th, on the 11th, it was rescheduled for the 19th.⁽¹¹⁹⁾

The Decision to Include the Sakaguchi Detachment, the Change in the Operation Plan of the [Sixteenth] Army, and the Paradrop [Operation] Issue

[Sixteenth] Army Commander Imamura advanced to Saigon on 4 February, the main force of the army completed its assembly in Cam Ranh Bay on the 10th, and the main force of the 48th Division advanced to Jolo on the 12th. During this period (on 10 February), the Sakaguchi Detachment seized Banjarmasin.

At that time, the Sakaguchi Detachment was implementing a military administration, stationing its headquarters and the Kanauji Battalion (the 2d Battalion) in the Balikpapan area and the Kume Battalion (the 1st Battalion) in the Sanga Sanga and the Samarinda area, while conducting the Banjarmasin operation with the Matsumoto Battalion (the 3d Battalion) led

by the commander of the 146th Infantry Regiment, Colonel Yamamoto.⁽⁸⁸⁾ On 5 February, while keeping the *Ehime-maru* and the *Liverpool-maru*, which had carried out the transport to Tanahgrogot for the Banjarmasin operation, Detachment Commander Sakaguchi sent the other ships (i.e. the *Nichiai-maru*, the *Havana-maru*, the *Hankow-maru*, the *Teiryū-maru* and the *Nisshō-maru* [*Hiteru-maru*]) to Palau under the command of the commander of the 44th Field Antiaircraft Artillery Battalion, Maj. Takagi Takeo. He ordered Major Takagi to load on the *Teiryū-maru* and the *Nisshō-maru* [*Hiteru-maru*] at Palau the remaining troops, horses, and matériel of the detachment, which had been left there, and lead them back to Balikpapan.⁽⁸⁸⁾

Around the time when the convoy led by Major Takagi departed, Detachment Commander Sakaguchi learned that a decision had been made to put the Navy in charge of the military administration in Dutch Borneo.⁽⁸⁷⁾ The news came as a surprise, as the Sakaguchi Detachment, which had been specifically requested to implement a proper military administration by Maj. Gen. Satō Kenryō, Chief of the Military Affairs Bureau of the War Ministry before its departure from the mainland, and which [accordingly] had made every kind of preparation for it, was putting its heart and soul into the implementation of a military administration.⁽⁸⁷⁾ [Editor's note: At that time, Major General Satō was still Chief of the Military Affairs Section.] At that time, the convoys for the Java invasion of the Sixteenth Army, to which the detachment belonged, were sailing southward one after another from Gaoxiong and Lingayen. Detachment Commander Sakaguchi immediately wired the Sixteenth Army a request for participation of his detachment in the Java operation.⁽⁸⁷⁾

The Sixteenth Army headquarters in Saigon received the telegram, but [ignored it because] it was still closely watching the progress of the Banjarmasin operation. On 10 February, the report of the seizure of Banjarmasin arrived. The Sixteenth Army immediately (on the same day) completed a draft order for the Sakaguchi Detachment to participate in the Java operation and sent (a) staff officer to the Southern Army headquarters to ask for the latter's approval. [However,] the 1st Section of the Staff Department of the Southern Army did not approve.⁽³⁶⁾ Then, Chief of Staff Okazaki [of the Sixteenth Army] visited Vice Chief of Staff Aoki [of the Southern Army] to make a [direct] appeal, [but] Vice Chief of Staff Aoki rejected it, insisting that the 56th Mixed Infantry Group had to be returned to the 56th Division for the Burma invasion operation and should not incur damage.⁽³⁶⁾ Chief of Staff Okazaki sought approval by saying that the Burma invasion operation was to come after the Java invasion, and that the main force of the Sixteenth Army would [also] take part in the Burma invasion when the Java invasion was completed. [Even then,] Vice Chief of Staff Aoki was reluctant to approve it.⁽³⁶⁾ Whether [the Southern Army] should let the Sakaguchi Detachment participate in the Java operation or not was not just a matter of whether to comply with the Sakaguchi Detachment's wish. Whereas the Sixteenth Army hoped that the powerful Sakaguchi Detachment would participate in the Java operation, the Southern Army had to consider the views of IGHQ as well as [the availability of] ships.

It was on 15 February (three days before the departure of the convoy of the main force of the Sixteenth Army from Cam Ranh Bay) that the Southern Army finally approved it. On the 16th, Major Takagi (who had left Balikpapan on the 5th and arrived in Palau on the 12th, leading the convoy [which had been used by the Sakaguchi Detachment]) received a telegraphic order from Detachment Commander Sakaguchi in Palau, which said: "Try to return to Balikpapan by the 21st at the latest with two of the ships, the *Teiryū-maru* and the *Nisshō-maru* [*Hiteru-maru*]."⁽⁸⁸⁾ On the 16th, the Sixteenth Army sent the following telegram:⁽¹¹⁹⁾

From: Chief of Staff, Sixteenth Army

To: Chiefs of Staff, Third Fleet, Eleventh Air Fleet, 48th Division, and Commander, 4th Destroyer Squadron

Sixteenth Army Classified Telegram No. 316,

2100, 16 February

Conform to the purport of Sixteenth Army Telegram No. 297, we would like to have the main force of the Sakaguchi Detachment assigned to the 48th Division as follows, and have it join the Dutch East Indies operation roughly in the following manner:

1. The detachment headquarters and about one infantry battalion shall embark in transport ships at Balikpapan on the 18th, leave the port on the night of the 21st, join the convoy of the 48th Division off Pamanukan under escort of the Navy, and go ashore in or near Kragan.
2. When the disembarkation of the above unit is completed (around the 27th), the said transport ships shall immediately be sent to Banjarmasin under escort of the Navy, and embark a unit [consisting of] about one and a half infantry battalions as the core, and put it ashore in Kragan.
3. The following units shall be left in Borneo for guarding:
 The Samarinda area: [A unit consisting of] one infantry battalion (minus two companies) as the core.
 The Balikpapan area: [A unit consisting of] about one infantry company as the core.
 In the current state, the above units will be sufficient for maintaining public order.
4. We would like to have the 48th Division commander give directions concerning the escort of the Sakaguchi Detachment under sail, the outline of the latter's landing [operation], and the like. If [all of] you will approve the above, from now on we would like the 48th Division commander to directly make arrangements with the 4th Destroyer Squadron commander.
5. Our headquarters shall leave Saigon on the morning of tomorrow, the 17th, and be on board the *Ryūjō-maru* from the afternoon of that day onwards.

The participation of the Sakaguchi Detachment in the Java operation was brought about after having gone through the above-described process. The order for its participation, however, was issued with the 10th as date (note: see the previously description) and read as follows:⁽³¹⁾

Sixteenth Army Order (summary)

1. The 48th Division shall land near Kragan before daybreak on day H.
2. The Sakaguchi Detachment shall go ashore near Kragan in the manner described below, charge toward Cilacap through the area west of a line which largely connects Mount Lasem (about twenty kilometers east of Rembang) and Mount Lawu (about forty kilometers east of Surakarta). It shall seize the city and cut off the enemy's escape route.
 - (1) The detachment headquarters and a unit [consisting of] one infantry battalion as the core shall embark at Balikpapan, and start landing near Kragan around daybreak of day H under escort of the Navy (if possible, after joining the convoy of the 48th Division off Balikpapan).
 - (2) Then, it shall immediately send the transport ships to Banjarmasin under escort of the Navy, and bring the unit [consisting of] about one and a half infantry battalions as the core to Kragan.
 - (3) After assembling its force in or near Kragan and making the necessary preparations for the raid, the detachment shall start its operation, charge toward Cilacap all at once, and seize the city.
3. The 48th Division commander shall make the necessary revisions in the arrangements with the 4th Destroyer Squadron regarding the participation of the Sakaguchi Detachment in the opera-

tion, and give directions about the escort of the latter under sail, the outline of the latter's landing [operation] (landing point(s), the anchorage, and the air defense), and the like. [However,] the division commander may let Detachment Commander Sakaguchi make the necessary arrangements directly with the relevant naval units concerning the embarkation at Balikpapan, the navigation to the landing point(s), and the move of the Banjarmasin unit.

The 48th Division commander and the 4th Destroyer Squadron commander, who had entered [the anchorage] at Jolo on 12 February, received the above telegram on the 16th, held talks and made arrangements on the 17th.⁽¹¹⁹⁾ Fortunately, the commander of the Dutch East Indies Unit had left Davao on the 13th with his main unit (the heavy cruiser *Ashigara* and the destroyer *Yamakaze*), arrived in Jolo on the 14th, and was preparing for departure (scheduled for the 17th) for the support of the operation to capture Bali. The 2d Base Force commander, who had supported the operation to seize Makassar (on the 9th), had also arrived in Jolo on the 13th.⁽¹¹⁹⁾ That was why the following decision could be made immediately (on the 17th):⁽¹¹⁹⁾

1. The [transport ships] which the Sakaguchi Detachment will board at Balikpapan shall be the *Ehime-maru* and the *Liverpool-maru*, which are [kept] there now. They shall join the convoy of the 48th Division in the Makassar Strait. The destroyer *Kawakaze* and the submarine chaser No. 4 shall provide the escort.
2. Regardless of the Sixteenth Army's order to send the *Ehime-maru* and the *Liverpool-maru* back [to Banjarmasin after disembarkation at Kragan], the faster ships *Sasako-maru* and *Sagami-maru*, which are employed in the Kanemura Detachment's landing [operation] on Bali on the 19th, shall be brought to Banjarmasin via Makassar by some time around the 24th, to take the unit there to Kragan by some time around the 27th. The escort shall be provided by an element of the 2d Base Unit.

On that day (the 17th), Major Takagi left Palau for Balikpapan, leading the *Teiryū-maru* and the *Nisshō-maru* [*Hiteru-maru*].⁽⁸⁸⁾

On the next day, the 18th, Detachment Commander Sakaguchi sent a telegraphic order to Major Takagi under sail: "The detachment will leave Balikpapan on the evening of the 21st and join the convoy of the 48th Division on the 22d. The *Teiryū-maru* and the *Nisshō-maru* [*Hiteru-maru*] shall catch up with it without calling at Balikpapan."⁽⁸⁸⁾ It (the 18th) was the day when the convoy of the main force of the Sixteenth Army departed from Cam Ranh Bay.

Revision of the Sixteenth Army's Operation Plan

The operation plan of the Sixteenth Army, which had been drawn up in late December, was [once] revised in early January due to the moving-up of the Java operation, the return of the South Seas Detachment [to central command], and other factors. In this revised plan, the Kanemura Detachment was removed in late January from the eastern Java operation forces in the part on the Java operation, but now it was decided to include the Sakaguchi Detachment [instead]. In the beginning of mid-February, the Sixteenth Army's Java operation plan (including Bali) was revised [again] in the following general way:^(36, 40)

Mission

The [Sixteenth] Army shall land on [both] eastern and western Java before daybreak on 26 February under cover of the Navy and the Third Air Force and occupy the entire island in a short period of time.

Directives

1. The 48th Division shall land in or near Kragan under cover of the Navy and seize Surabaya. The Kanemura Detachment shall capture Bali prior to the landing [operation] of the main force.
2. The Sakaguchi Detachment shall land in or near Kragan almost simultaneously with [the landing of] the 48th Division, charge toward Cilacap, and seize the city.
3. The 2d Division shall land at Bantam Bay with its main force and in or near Merak with one element. It shall have a powerful element charge toward Buitenzorg and seize the city, while having the main force advance toward Batavia and seize the city.
4. The Shōji Detachment shall land in or near Eretan, secure the Kalijati airfield in a surprise attack, while operating in concert with the main force of the 2d Division.
5. After the seizure of Batavia, the main force of the 2d Division and the Shōji Detachment shall attack the Bandung stronghold, lining up side by side to its north.
6. Depending on the circumstances, the detachment charging toward Buitenzorg and the Shōji Detachment shall seize Bandung at one fell swoop.

The Issue of the Employment of the Paratroop Unit [for the Operation] Against Cilacap

Once Bali and southern Sumatra were seized, Cilacap was the [only] port where the allied forces on Java could receive reinforcements or from where they could retreat. The Sixteenth Army, of course, had noticed this and so had the Southern Army.

The Southern Army studied [the possibility of] a plan to have the 1st [Paratroop] Raiding Group parachute down in Cilacap and asked for the opinion of the unit that was to execute it.

As we have seen, the 1st [Paratroop] Raiding Group had carried out the paratroop operation against Palembang on 14 February. Sixteenth Army Staff Officer Lieutenant Colonel Itoda, who had descended in Palembang along with the 1st [Paratroop] Raiding Group ([consisting of] the group headquarters and the 2d [Paratroop] Raiding Regiment), had offered, as already described, his opinion from Palembang on 17 February that [the group] should not be used for [the operation against] Cilacap.⁽²³⁾

As described previously, the 38th Division commander had landed in Palembang at 1435 on that day (the 17th). At that very moment, the 1st [Paratroop] Raiding Group had come under the command of the Sixteenth Army (the 38th Division). Accordingly, the above-mentioned opinion had been offered to the Sixteenth Army commander, but was also sent to the Southern Army by telegram.

On that day (the 17th), the Southern Army was conducting a study on Cilacap, Sabang (northwest of Sumatra), the Andaman Islands (north of Sabang), and Yenangyaung (an oil field in Burma) as [prospective] subsequent drop spots for the 1st [Paratroop] Raiding Group. On that day, the Third Air Force urged the Southern Army to decide the next drop spot as soon as possible.^(23, 30, 97)

On 20 February, the 1st [Paratroop] Raiding Group reported to the Southern Army its views on Cilacap, Sabang, Pangkalan Brandan (an oil field in northwestern Sumatra) and

the Andamans. Its opinion was that (1) unless it was to be employed in the [operation against] Cilacap, it could be employed in [the operations against] Sabang, the Andamans, Pangkalan Brandan and other areas, but [only] on different days; that (2) if it was to be employed in [the operation against] the Cilacap stronghold, [the operation] would require the employment of the full force of the current raiding group and the group could [then] not be employed in other areas.

On the same day, IGHQ conveyed to the Southern Army its view that the group should be employed to seize oil resources. On the 24th, the Southern Army decided to employ the group in [an operation against] the Pangkalan Brandan oil field. However, after [this decision], it turned out that about 80% of the oil field had been destroyed, so on the 27th–28th the decision was changed to employ the unit in Burma.^(23, 30, 97)

In the meantime, the 1st [Paratroop] Raiding Group had returned under the command of the Third Air Force by the Southern Army order of the 22d, and then, on 1 March, it was returned to the direct control of the Southern Army, as previously described.

2. The Sailing [of the Convoys]

The Situation of the Enemy as Assessed Just Before the Sailing

The main force of the Sixteenth Army and the 48th Division respectively departed from Cam Ranh Bay and Jolo on 18 and 19 February and headed for Java. The situation of the enemy as known at that time was in outline as follows:

1. Air force

At the end of January (when the Twenty-fifth Army advanced to the shore opposite Singapore), the air force in the Dutch East Indies (mainly on Java and Sumatra) was estimated to be five hundred aircraft. (See the previous descriptions.) [pp. 256–257, 419–420.]

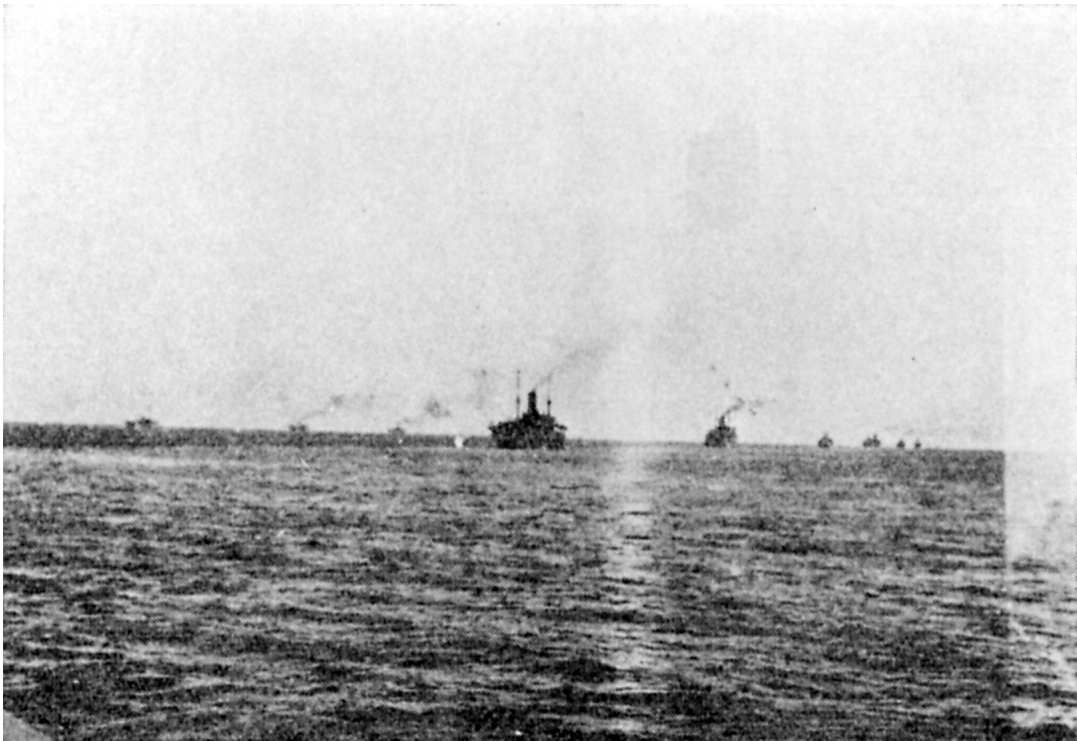
On 10 February, the Southern Army estimated that “the Dutch East Indies forces [deployed] a total of about four hundred aircraft.”⁽²³⁾ On the same day, [the Navy Department of] IGHQ notified that “according to enemy telegrams, the enemy air force in Singapore, Sumatra and Java consists of 190 bombers and 200 pursuit aircraft as of the 6th, and they are being reinforced by two bombers every day and thirty-six pursuit aircraft every week.”⁽¹¹⁷⁾

Although [the Japanese forces] had seized the Palembang airfield on 14 February, the Lesser Sunda Islands were still under the control of the allied forces as of 18 February, and the judgment was that the [enemy] losses were being replenished.

2. Fleet

In the eastern Java area, the whereabouts of the allied fleet, which was [considered to] have retreated after having three of its cruisers sunk ([according to the Japanese] judgment at that time) out of seven cruisers and nine destroyers in the sea engagement off Java on 4 February, were unknown.⁽¹⁰²⁾ Bad weather had hindered aerial reconnaissance.⁽¹⁰²⁾

In the western Java area, the three cruisers and five destroyers, which had retreated after assuming a posture of counterattack at the Gaspar Strait at the time of the southern Sumatra landing operation on 15 February, were considered to be near Batavia.⁽¹⁰²⁾ On 9 February, the Southern Task Force wired that “through our air raids at the beginning of February, the enemy based on Java has lost most of its air and naval forces, and as our invasion operations progress, it is highly likely that the remaining forces will attempt to escape to Australia, India and South Africa.”⁽¹¹⁷⁾ [See pp. 407, 424.] However, the units assigned to capture Bali and those departing for western Java were concerned because of the above-mentioned counterattacks on 15 February, the day-



The Sailing of the Convoy of the Main Force of the Sixteenth Army

in-day-out bad weather in the eastern Java area, the unfinished operations to capture southern Sumatra, and other reasons.⁽¹¹⁴⁾

As mentioned previously, the units involved [in the operation to] capture Bali requested the Eleventh Air Fleet to search for the enemy and attack them, and on the 18th (the day of departure from Cam Ranh Bay) the commander of the 5th Destroyer Squadron, Rear Admiral Hara, also requested the commander of the Malaya Unit, Vice Admiral Ozawa, to launch an air attack on the allied fleets in the waters west of Java, to have the 7th Cruiser Division accompany the convoy of transport ships, and to have the aircraft carrier *Ryūjō* sail along with them as well if possible.⁽¹²⁰⁾

3. The army

The strength known in 1941 was as follows:^(2, 23)

Time the information was known:	End of September	Beginning of November	10 November
Java:	50,000		
Dutch East Indies in total:	70,000	85,000	100,000

The breakdown of the above 100,000 troops was known to be 75,000 regular troops, 15,000 volunteer soldiers and 10,000 policemen and indigenous units, while the ratios of white men in the regular troops, the volunteer troops and the police force were 20%, 95% and 10% respectively. The army strength on Java was known to consist of two divisions as the core.^(2, 23)

After the opening of hostilities, the Dutch East Indies Army staff officer who was taken prisoner in the [Japanese] capture of Tarakan (11 January) stated that one division had been added in central Java, which increased the troops in Java to three divisions as the core, and that their disposition on Java was:⁽²⁴⁾

Army headquarters: Bandung.

Eastern Java: One division ([one unit consisting of] three infantry battalions as the core in Malang, and [one unit consisting of] one infantry battalion as the core in Surabaya).

Central Java: One division ([one unit consisting of] three infantry battalions as the core in Magelang and [one unit consisting of] one infantry battalion in Surakarta and Cilacap each).

Western Java: One division ([one unit consisting of] three infantry battalions as the core in Bandung, and [another unit consisting of] three infantry battalions as the core in Batavia).

Along with the progress of [the operation to] seize key areas outside Java, the information on the [enemy] disposition known by the end of January and by 10 February was as shown in Illustrations No. 42 and No. 43.⁽²³⁾ However, it was information on the Dutch East Indies Army [only]. After the opening of hostilities, the American-British-Dutch-Australian (ABDA) Command was established, and it was beyond doubt that Supreme Commander General Wavell (Britain) had set up his general headquarters near Bandung.⁽²³⁾ There was [also] information that two or three battalions of the British and Australian armies were additionally sent to Sumatra by the end of January.⁽²³⁾ How many [allied] troops would retreat to Java from Singapore and Sumatra with the operations against southern Sumatra in progress, and how many [allied] troops had been or would be additionally sent to Java from other countries, was [also] a matter of concern.

The Start of the Sailing and a Two-Day Postponement of the Landings

(See Illustrations No. 44 and No. 45)

The large convoy of the main force of the Sixteenth Army [consisting] of fifty-six ships departed from Cam Ranh Bay at 1000 on the 18th,⁽¹²⁰⁾ while the convoy of the 48th Division [consisting] of thirty-eight ships departed from Jolo at 0800 on the 19th.⁽¹¹⁹⁾

As of the 19th, the Tanaka Detachment was heading southward from Palembang for Tanjungkarang in southern Sumatra. In the Lesser Sunda Islands, the Kanemura Detachment was from that morning in the middle of its landing [operation] on Bali, while the Eastern Detachment was approaching Timor for its landing operation scheduled for the following morning. The Carrier Task Force (the First Air Fleet) under the command of Vice Admiral Nagumo was carrying out an air raid on Port Darwin in full force on that day.

On that day (the 19th), the Southern Task Force was escorting the transport of the Sixteenth Army units, and operated roughly as follows:

Main force of the Southern Task Force with the flagship *Atago* (a heavy cruiser) [and consisting of] the 3d Battleship Division (the battleships *Hiei*, *Kirishima*, *Kongō* and *Haruna*) and the 4th Destroyer Division (the *Arashi*, the *Nowaki*, the *Hagikaze* and the *Maikaze*) had left Palau on the day before, the 18th, and was first advancing toward Staring Bay (southeast Celebes) with the aim of conducting operations in the waters south of Java at the time of the Java landing operation (on the 26th).⁽¹¹⁶⁾

Carrier Task Force [consisting of] the aircraft carriers *Akagi* and *Kaga* (the 1st Carrier Division), and the aircraft carriers *Sōryū* and *Hiryū* (the 2d Carrier Division), the heavy cruisers *Maya* and *Takao* ([of] the 4th Cruiser Division), *Tone* and *Chikuma* ([of] the 8th Cruiser Division), the 1st Destroyer Squadron (the light cruiser *Abukuma*, the 17th Destroyer Division, and the 2d Section of the 27th Destroyer Division), the 18th Destroyer Division (minus two destroyers), and the *Akigumo*, was in the middle of the air raid on Port Darwin. It was scheduled to

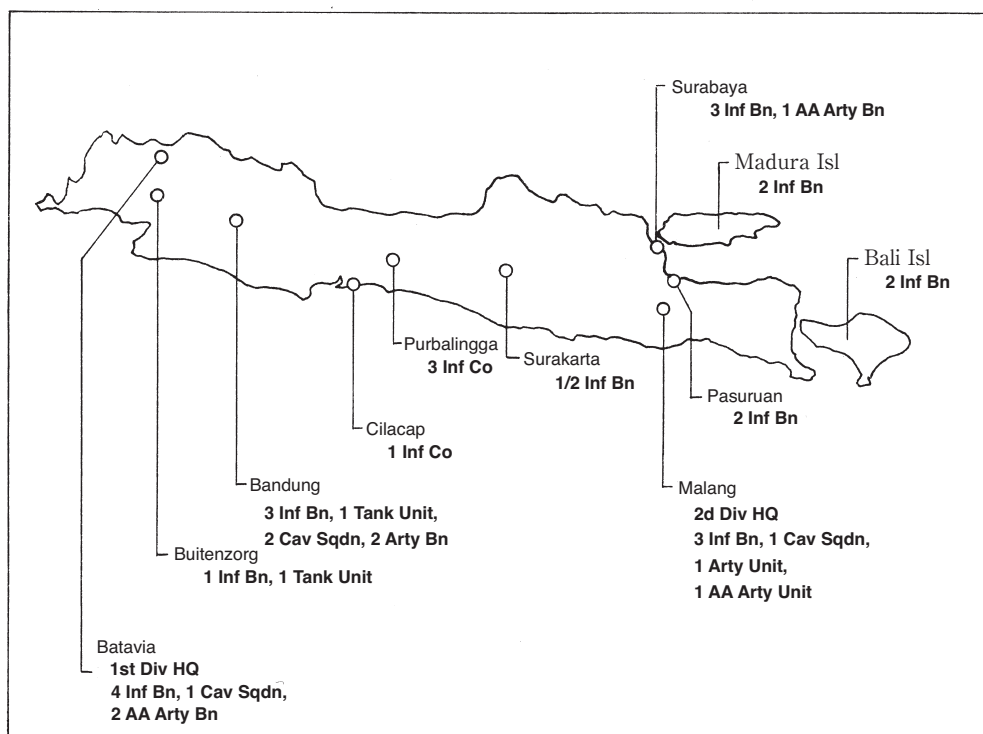
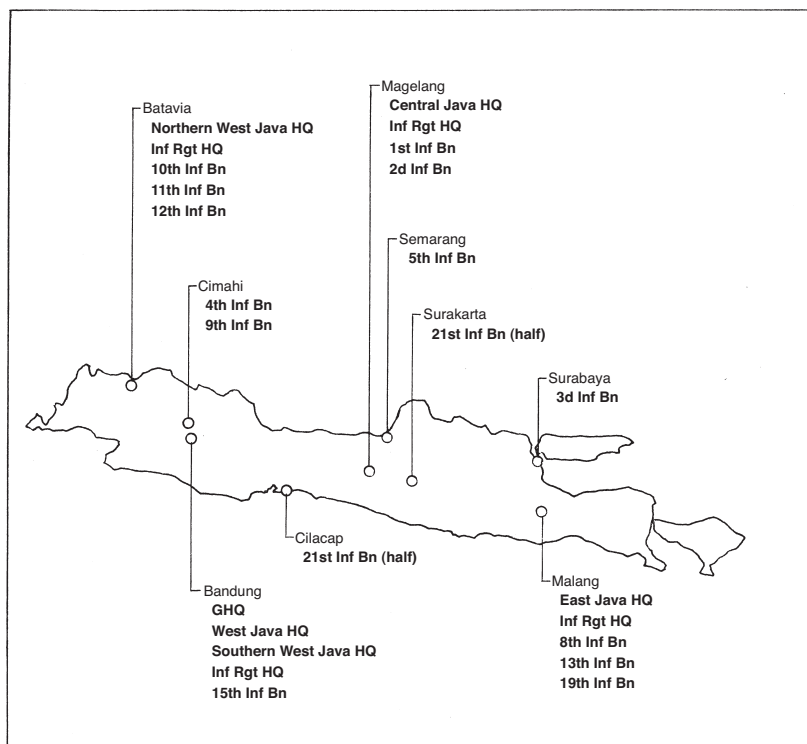


Illustration No. 42 — The [Enemy] Disposition as Known by the End of January

Illustration No. 43 — The [Enemy] Disposition as Known by 10 February

return to Staring Bay on the 21st and then conduct carrier operations on the waters south of Java.^(116, 123)

Malaya Unit:

On the 16th, judging that the escort operations in [Operation] L were for the most part completed, [First Southern Expeditionary Fleet] Commander in Chief Ozawa had switched the main force to its next operation. However, on that day, the 19th, the convoy of the main force of the 38th Division had not yet reached Palembang, and its river-ascending operation was still going on. [Nevertheless,] the flagship *Chōkai* (a heavy cruiser), the aircraft carrier *Ryūjō*, and the destroyers *Shikinami* and *Isonami* returned to Cap Saint Jacques on that day, the 19th.

The light cruiser *Yura*, the 11th Destroyer Division (the *Hatsuyuki*, the *Shirayuki* and the *Fubuki*), the 12th Destroyer Division (the *Shirakumo* and the *Murakumo*), and the auxiliary seaplane tender *Kamikawa-maru*, which were to be transferred to the Dutch East Indies Unit (the 3d Escort Unit) on the 21st, completed assembly in the Anambas Islands by that day [the 19th].

The 7th Cruiser Division (the heavy cruisers *Kumano*, *Suzuya*, *Mikuma* and *Mogami*), which was to support the Java landing operation of the main force of the Sixteenth Army ([escorted by] the 5th Destroyer Squadron), had entered the anchorage in the Anambas Islands on the 17th, and was standing by there.

The 3d Destroyer Squadron commander was continuing Operation L, leading the light cruiser *Sendai* (the flagship), a few destroyers and lesser ships.^(103, 115, 118, 130)

The 22d Air Flotilla returned under the command of the commander in chief of the Eleventh Air Fleet on this day (the 19th) ahead of schedule and became the 3d Air Raid Unit.^(104, 135)

Dutch East Indies Unit:

Main Unit, the flagship *Ashigara* (a heavy cruiser) and the destroyer *Yamakaze* (accompanied by the *Kawakaze* as well) left Jolo on the 17th and advanced to Balikpapan to support the operation to capture Bali (the *Kawakaze* was for escorting the Sakaguchi Detachment).⁽¹⁰³⁾

The Bali Invasion [Support] Unit, [consisting of] the light cruiser *Nagara* and the 8th Destroyer Division (the *Oshio*, the *Asashio*, the *Michishio* and the *Arashio*) was in the middle of supporting the landing [operation] on Bali, which had started that morning.⁽¹²⁴⁾

The Timor Invasion [Support] Unit, [consisting of] the heavy cruisers *Haguro* and *Nachi* of the 5th Cruiser Division, and the auxiliary seaplane tender *Mizuho*, the flagship light cruiser *Jintsū* of the 2d Destroyer Squadron, the destroyers *Oyashio*, *Hayashio* and *Kuroshio* (of the 15th Destroyer Division), the *Yukikaze*, the *Tokitsukaze*, the *Amatsukaze*, and the *Hatsukaze* (of the 16th Destroyer Division), the *Ushio*, the *Sazanami* and the *Akebono* (of the 7th Destroyer Division), and the *Ikazuchi* (of the 6th Destroyer Division) was supporting the landing operation on Timor to be conducted on the next day, the 20th.^(114, 117)

The unit to escort the 48th Division, [consisting of] the light cruiser *Naka*, flagship of the 4th Destroyer Squadron commander, the 2d Destroyer Division (the *Murasame*, the *Samidare*, the *Yūdachi* and the *Harusame*), both of which had escorted the division from Lingayen Gulf, the 9th Destroyer Division (the *Asagumo*, the *Natsugumo* and the *Minegumo*), the 24th Destroyer Division (only the *Umikaze*; the *Kawakaze* had departed with the main unit [of the Dutch East Indies Unit] earlier), the [mine]layer *Itsukushima*, flagship of the 2d Base Force commander, the seaplane tender *Chitose*, all of which had sailed north to Jolo after supporting the Makassar operation, escorted the convoy of the 48th Division [consisting] of thirty-eight ships (apart from the *Satsuma-maru* which departed later) from Jolo.⁽¹¹⁹⁾

The unit to escort the main force of the Sixteenth Army, [consisting of] the light cruiser *Natori*, flagship of the 5th Destroyer Squadron commander, the 5th Destroyer Division (the *Harukaze*, the *Hatakaze*, the *Asakaze* and the *Matsukaze*) and the 22d Destroyer Division (the *Nagatsuki*,

the *Minazuki*, the *Fumizuki* and the *Satsuki*), all of which had escorted the force from Gaoxiong, the 1st Section of the 6th Destroyer Division (the *Akatsuki* and the *Hibiki*, which came from Davao to Cam Ranh), and the auxiliary seaplane tender *San'yō-maru* (which had been diverted to Cam Ranh after the Balikpapan operation) had departed from Cam Ranh on the day before, the 18th (on the 17th for the *San'yō-maru*), and was sailing southward, escorting the convoy of fifty-six ships carrying the main force of the Sixteenth Army. They were notified that they would be joined by the previously-mentioned 11th Destroyer Division (the *Hatsuyuki*, the *Shirayuki* and the *Fubuki*), the 12th Destroyer Division (the *Shirakumo* and the *Murakumo*), the light cruiser *Yura*, and the auxiliary seaplane tender *Kamikawa-maru* at the Anambas Islands on the 21st, and that they would be provided with the cooperation of the 7th Cruiser Division ([consisting of] four heavy cruisers).⁽¹²⁰⁾

Submarine Unit, [consisting of] Submarine Unit A (the 4th and the 6th Submarine Squadrons), B (the 5th Submarine Squadron) and C (the 2d Submarine Squadron) was advancing respectively towards the seas southeast, west, and south of Java.⁽¹¹⁷⁾

Air Unit (the Eleventh Air Fleet):

On that day, the 19th, the force under the command of the 22d Air Flotilla commander was returned from the Malaya Unit. Vice Admiral Tsukahara (with his headquarters in Davao) [ordered] the shift to phase-three operations with the disposition of the 1st Air Raid Unit ([consisting of] the 21st Air Flotilla as the core, whose headquarters had returned from Ambon to Kendari on the 17th), the 2d Air Raid Unit ([consisting of] the 23d Air Flotilla with its headquarters in Balikpapan), and the 3d Air Raid Unit ([consisting of] the 22d Air Flotilla with its headquarters in Kuching).⁽¹³⁵⁾

Note: The Southern Task Force had issued an order on 18 February and brought forward the date of transfer of the force under the command of the 22d Air Flotilla commander from the 21st to the 19th.⁽¹³⁵⁾

On that day (the 19th), the [Army] Third Air Force launched an air assault on western Java from Palembang.

On the next day, the 20th, the convoy [of the units for the operation] to capture Java steadily sailed south. As we have seen, allied cruisers and destroyers raided the disembarkation point at Bali before daybreak. The 8th Destroyer Division fought a fierce battle, and the main unit of the Dutch East Indies Unit (the *Ashigara*, the *Kawakaze*, and the *Yamakaze*) rushed southward on this day, having left Balikpapan at 0300 before daybreak. Fortunately, the sea battle ended in Japanese favor, and twenty-seven aircraft of the 2d Air Raid Unit advanced to the Bali airfield as early as that day. In the western [theater], Tanjungkarang was seized on that day, the 20th, and in the eastern [theater], the landing [operation] on Timor was successfully carried out on the same day.

On the next day, the 21st, the convoy kept steadily sailing southward. That morning the convoy of the 48th Division reached the north end of the Makassar Strait and was sailing southward off Samarinda in the evening. The commander of the Dutch East Indies Unit transferred the 8th Destroyer Division, which had engaged in a fierce battle off Bali, to the main unit on that day and ordered the division to stand by in Makassar.⁽¹¹⁷⁾ He [also ordered] the seaplane tender *Mizuho*, which was in the middle of the Timor operation, to sail westward.⁽¹¹⁷⁾ The main unit of the Southern Task Force, which had sailed south from Palau, and the Carrier Task Force, which had carried out the air raid on Port Darwin, both entered the anchorage at Staring Bay on that day.⁽¹⁰²⁾ The commander of the Southern Task Force issued the following order on that day:⁽¹¹⁹⁾



Illustration No. 44 — Situation [of Japanese Forces] on 19 February

Day Z shall be set as the base date of the operation and shall be applied to the Southern Task Force and the Southern Army as a whole. Day Z shall be 26 February.

In the western [theater], the *Yura*, and the 11th and the 12th Destroyer Divisions, which had been transferred to the command of the 5th Destroyer Squadron commander from the Malaya Unit, joined the convoy of the main force of the Sixteenth Army in the waters about 100 nautical miles north of the Anambas Islands at 0800 on that day. This increased the escort of the convoy of the main force of the Sixteenth Army to two cruisers and fifteen destroyers. Apart from those, the *San'yō-maru* (which had left Cam Ranh on the 17th and arrived in the Anambas Islands on the 19th) and the *Kamikawa-maru* (which had been in Anambas since [the execution of] Operation L) had been providing direct escort with their seaplanes.^(120, 130, 131) (See Illustration No. 45)

On the next day, the 22d, the convoy was still steadily sailing southward. However, around 1500 when it reached the waters at the latitude and longitude of 1°24' N 107°55' E, the convoy of the main force of the Sixteenth Army reversed its course and began to sail northward.⁽¹³⁰⁾ This was because according to a signal from the *Natori*, the flagship of the 5th Destroyer Squadron, "[due to] a powerful enemy fleet spotted in the Java Sea, day H has been postponed by two days, and the landing [operation] has been changed to the 28th."⁽³⁶⁾ The convoy's sailing in reverse direction still continued on the morning of the 23d. At the time of departure from Cam Ranh, [Sixteenth] Army Commander Imamura had given the order that "should anything happen to me, [2d] Divisional Commander Maruyama should take command, and if anything should happen to Divisional Commander Maruyama, Chief

of Staff Okazaki [of the Sixteenth Army] should take command.”^(35, 47) On the *Ryūjō-maru* carrying the army headquarters, some staff officers of the army started saying: “Shouldn’t we land on southern Sumatra and then land on Java by maneuvering [landing] craft [from there]?.”⁽⁴⁴⁾ Others complained that it was a fine kettle of fish that the *Chōkai*, the flagship of the Malaya Unit, and the aircraft carrier *Ryūjō* had stayed at Cap Saint Jacques to prepare for a triumphal entry into the port of Singapore on the 27th.⁽³⁶⁾ Around 1400 (on the 23d), the convoy finally reversed course and resumed its southward sailing. The Dutch East Indies Unit officially proposed the army to reschedule day H (Z) for the 28th. The [Sixteenth] Army commander wired back his approval and transmitted it to all the transport ships. Sometime after 1600, allied submarine(s) were spotted, but the convoy continued sailing southward on a zigzag course.

In the meantime (on the 22d and the 23d), the general situation had changed roughly in the following way:

1. The air operations had progressed in the following way since 18 February.^(96, 99, 100, 104)

18 [February]

Eastern Java: Twenty-three land-based attack planes and fifteen fighter planes of the 2d Air Raid Unit conducted an [air] raid on Surabaya from Balikpapan. Six [enemy] destroyers and sixteen transport ships were spotted in the port.

Western Java: It was impossible to conduct [air] attacks.

19 [February]

It was the day when the Air Unit (the Eleventh Air Fleet) shifted to phase-three dispositions, and when the force under the command of the 22d Air Flotilla commander became the 3d Air Raid Unit. [It was also the day] when the [Army] Third Air Force launched an air campaign against Java.

Eastern Java: Although eighteen land-based attack planes and twenty-four fighter planes of the 2d Air Raid Unit took off from Balikpapan to conduct an [air] attack on Surabaya, they could not enter [over the city] due to bad weather and attacked Bawean Island and other locations [instead].

Western Java: The [Navy] 3d Air Raid Unit conducted a reconnaissance of Batavia from Kuching with [a] land-based reconnaissance aircraft. One ship, which was apparently an [enemy] aircraft carrier, three cruisers and ten transport ships were spotted. The [Army] Third Air Force carried out an [air] assault on Bandung, Buitenzorg and other cities from Palembang with a [mixed] force of some sixty fighter planes and bombers, and engaged with some thirty or more allied planes.

20 [February]

Eastern Java: Twenty-seven fighter planes and three land-based reconnaissance aircraft of the [Navy] 2d Air Raid Unit advanced into Bali. Twenty-two fighter planes of the 23d Air Flotilla conducted a raid on Surabaya and Malang.

Western Java: The land-based attack planes of the [Naval] 3d Air Raid Unit searched for the enemy in Batavia from Kuching and spotted five cruisers, eight destroyers, fifty or more transport ships, ten flying boats and three reconnaissance seaplanes in Batavia. The [Army] Third Air Force carried out a raid on Kalijati from Palembang with a [mixed] force of some fifty fighter planes and bombers.

21 [February]

Eastern Java: Thirteen fighter planes of the 23d Air Flotilla conducted a raid on Surabaya and vicinity from Bali and Balikpapan. Twenty-one land-based attack planes of the 23d

Air Flotilla conducted a raid on Surabaya from Balikpapan. One [enemy] cruiser and thirteen destroyers were spotted in the port.

Western Java: A [mixed] force of some thirty fighter planes and bombers of the [Army] Third Air Force conducted a raid on Kalijati and Bandung from Palembang.

2. The main unit of the Dutch East Indies Unit, which had rushed south from Balikpapan on the 20th at the report of a naval engagement near the landing point on Bali, entered the anchorage of Staring Bay on the morning of the 22d and joined the main force of the Southern Task Force and the Carrier Task Force, which had advanced into the bay the day before.

The commanders of the Southern Task Force, the Dutch East Indies Unit and the Carrier Task Force held talks, examined [the situation], and decided that the air campaign that had started on the 18th (for eastern Java) and the 19th (for western Java) was not sufficient, and that there seemed to remain five to seven [enemy] cruisers and some ten destroyers in Batavia and two cruisers and about five destroyers in Surabaya.

They also judged that it was necessary to intensify the air campaigns and reinforce the surface units in the Java Sea area, which would necessitate a two-day postponement of the date of the landings.⁽¹¹⁷⁾

Accordingly, telegrams [to propose] a two-day postponement of the date of the landings, etc. were sent around 1200 on the 22d to the Sixteenth Army and the Southern Army. Also, the orders to reverse course for the convoys were transmitted, and by evening directions were given about the concentration of surface forces into the Java Sea, etc.

The Dutch East Indies Unit issued the following order concerning the course reversal of the convoys:⁽¹¹⁷⁾

Third Fleet Classified Telegram No. 445

1200, 22 February

The dates to launch the landing of Operation *Su* and *Ya* shall be postponed until 28 February. The unit for Operation *Su* shall stand by near Balikpapan. The unit for Operation *Ya* shall act at the right moment as designated by the commander.

Note: *Su* indicated eastern Java, and *Ya* western Java.

The proposal wired by the Dutch East Indies Unit to the Sixteenth Army regarding the postponement of the schedule read: "In view of the activities of naval vessels and aircraft of the enemy in the Java area as well as the results of our air campaigns, we propose a postponement of the date to start landing by two days until 28 February." At the same time, the Southern Task Force sent a telegram to the same effect to the Southern Army, and also requested it to cooperate in the naval air unit(s)' advance into the Gelumbang base so that they could destroy [enemy] naval vessels in the western Java area.⁽²⁴⁾ The Sixteenth Army wired back its approval on the 23d.⁽³²⁾ On the 23d, the Southern Army replied to the Southern Task Force: "While requesting no further postponements other than the above days, we will [provide] ample support to make the Gelumbang airfield ready for the Navy," and sent the following telegram to the 38th Division.^(23, 24) The reason why it sent the telegram directly to the 38th Division was that it thought that the Sixteenth Army had sealed off its radio communications.

From: Chief of Staff [Southern Army]

To: 38th Division commander [in] Palembang (sent on the 23d)

Southern Army Staff Section 1 Telegram No. 95

1. [This] is to the highest extent relevant to the landing [operation] of the main force for [Operation] H. We would like you to immediately provide the Navy with ample support to make the Gelumbang airfield ready ([by] transporting fuel and ammunition, etc.).
2. Gelumbang is located about fifty kilometers southwest of Palembang.
3. The warship *Shumushu* and the *Kōchō-maru* [probably a misprint for *Kōryū-maru*] are in charge of readying the Navy's airfield and are now in port in Palembang.

As for the concentration of surface forces into the Java Sea and other issues, the Southern Task Force and the Dutch East Indies Unit decided the following and gave directions by the night of the 22d:⁽¹¹⁷⁾

1. The main force of the Southern Task Force and the Carrier Task Force shall leave Staring Bay on the 25th and advance to the sea south of Java as formerly planned. The 5th Cruiser Division's advance into the Indian Ocean shall be canceled.
2. The main unit of the Dutch East Indies Unit (the *Ashigara*, the *Ikazuchi* and the *Akebono* — the *Yamakaze* and the *Kawakaze* were replaced by the *Ikazuchi* and the *Akebono*) shall leave Staring Bay on the morning of the 23d, first support the second disembarkation operation at Bali (on the 25th), and then support the unit to land in eastern Java.
3. The Eastern Support Unit ([of the Dutch East Indies Unit, consisting of] the 5th Cruiser Division, the *Ikazuchi* and the *Akebono*, which had returned to Staring Bay on the 22d after supporting the Timor landing operation) shall be reorganized into the 5th Cruiser Division Unit, which will be made up of the 5th Cruiser Division (the *Nachi* and the *Haguro*), the *Yamakaze* the *Kawakaze*, and the 1st Section of the 7th Destroyer Division (the *Ushio* and the *Sazanami*, which were [at that time] in the middle of the Timor operation). [The unit] shall timely operate around the rear of the 1st Escort Unit (which, with the 4th Destroyer Squadron as the core, is escorting the unit for the landing in eastern Java), support the unit, and catch and destroy allied naval vessels. In this operation, the 5th Cruiser Division commander may give directions to the 4th and the 2d Destroyer Squadron commanders (the latter of whom is conducting the Timor operation, but is supposed to hurry to join [the operation]). The advance of the 5th Cruiser Division to the Indian Ocean shall be canceled.
4. The *Nagara*, the 8th Destroyer Division (the *Asashio* and the *Arashio*), and the 21st Destroyer Division (the *Wakaba*, the *Nenohi*, and the *Hatsushimo*) under the command of the 1st Base Force commander, shall leave Makassar on the 23d and cover the second disembarkation operation on Bali on the 25th.
5. The 2d Escort Unit (which is covering the landing [operation] on Timor) shall be disbanded at 1800 on the 24th. The *Jintsū* and the 16th Destroyer Division (the *Yukikaze*, the *Tokitsukaze*, the *Amatsukaze* and the *Hatsukaze*), under the command of the 2d Destroyer Squadron commander, shall advance to the waters south of Cape Selatan around 1600 on the 26th from Timor by way of Makassar. The 15th Destroyer Division (the *Oyashio*, the *Hayashio*, the *Kuroshio* and the *Natsushio* [editor's note: the last-mentioned ship had actually been sunk on 9 February, see p. 397] shall participate in the carrier operation of the Carrier Task Force and the main force of the Southern Task Force in the Indian Ocean from Timor. The 1st Section of the 7th Destroyer Division (the *Ushio* and the *Sazanami*) shall sail westward from Timor to come under the command of the 5th Cruiser Division commander.
6. The *Tomozuru* shall leave Makassar, escorting the *Sasako-maru* (which had returned to Makassar after disembarking the Kanemura Detachment at Bali), embark Regimental Commander

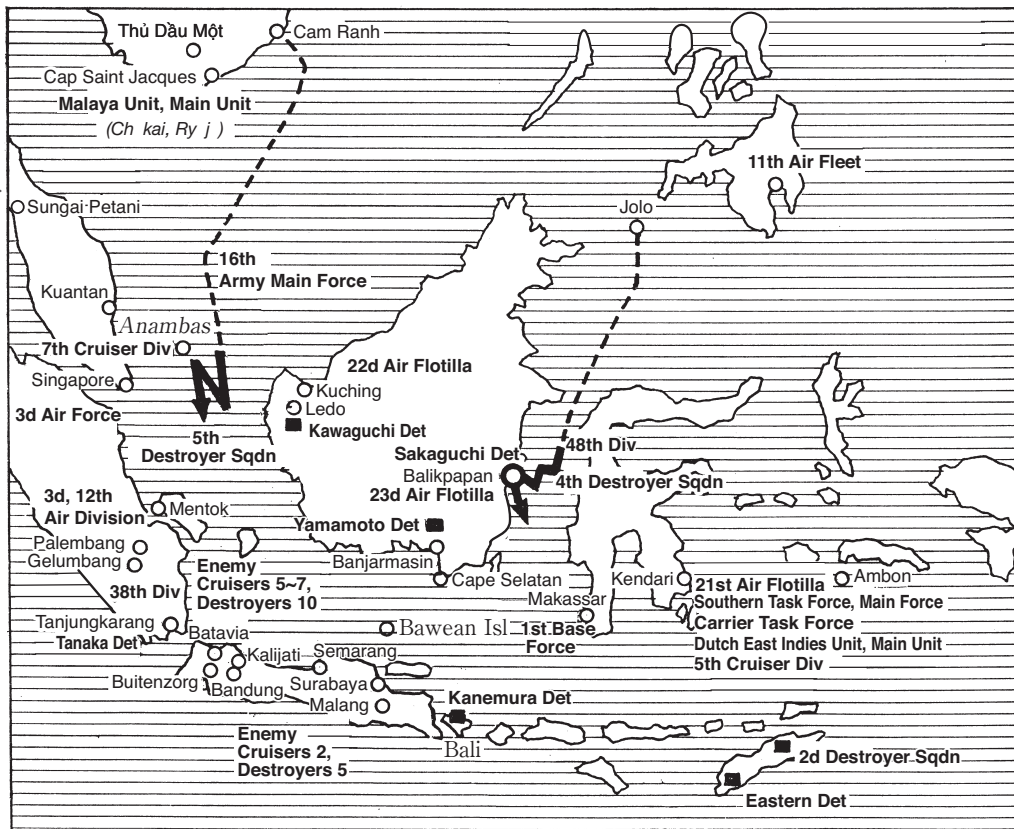


Illustration No. 45 — The Situation on 22 and 23 February

Yamamoto and his men on the *Sasako-maru* at Banjarmasin and then let the latter join the convoy [of the units to] land on eastern Java on the sea south of Cape Selatan around 1200 on the 26th.

3. The *Ehime-maru* and the *Liverpool-maru* carrying the main force of the Sakaguchi Detachment left Balikpapan at 0800 on the 22d and took up their position at the rear of the convoy of the 48th Division north of Aru Bank at 1200 on the same day.⁽¹¹⁹⁾ The 1st Escort Unit (i.e. the 4th Destroyer Squadron), which had passed through the waterway of Aru Bank at 1220 escorting the 48th Division and the Sakaguchi Detachment, received the previously mentioned telegraphic order around 1345, reversed the course of the convoy at 1400, and temporarily anchored at a spot thirteen nautical miles southwest of Balikpapan.⁽¹¹⁹⁾ The *Teiryū-maru* and the *Nisshō-maru* [*Hiteru-maru*] under the command of [Army] Major Takagi, which had hurriedly sailed from Palau, had arrived in Balikpapan before noon on that day. They had sailed night and day in such a hurry that five stokers had collapsed on the way. On arrival in Balikpapan, [Army Major Takagi] had drawn a sigh of disappointment when Detachment Commander Kume told him: "The Sakaguchi Detachment has [already] departed this morning." However, luckily for him, he learned the next day, the 23d, that the convoy had reversed course, as previously mentioned, and he [was able

to] join [the convoy] on the same day.⁽⁸⁸⁾ [Editor's note: There is some confusion about the date and time he joined the convoy. See pp. 450, 537.]

4. The Southern Army had wired that ample support should be immediately provided to make the Gelumbang airfield ready. The Gelumbang issue had gone through the following twists and turns.

In eastern Java, the aircraft of the 2d Air Raid Unit, which had advanced into Bali from the 20th onwards, conducted a raid over Semarang and other locations from Bali with six fighter planes on the 22d for two days running (which was mentioned earlier). It also conducted a raid on Malang from Bali with fourteen fighter planes on the 23d and was freely carrying out its air campaign. Against western Java, however, the 3d Air Raid Unit had not been able to launch air attacks [yet].⁽¹⁰⁴⁾

The air operation against western Java was [planned and conducted] roughly in the following way.

On 28 January, an arrangement had been concluded for the [air operation in] Operation L between the Army and the Navy [pp. 265-267], which was in outline that (1) the [Navy] Malaya Unit and the Army should employ respectively about 176 and about 137 aircraft; (2) that when the Ledo [airfield] was fit for use, the Malaya Unit should use the Ledo, the Kuching, the Kuantan and the Sungai Petani [airfields]; (3) that the Malaya Unit should attack [the area] east of the line connecting Mentok and Palembang; and (4) that after the landing in L [i.e. Bangka and Palembang], the airfield on Bangka should be shared by the Army and the Navy with thirty aircraft each, whereas Palembang should be used exclusively by the Army.⁽⁹⁶⁾ However, the Ledo airfield was not fit for use, and even though the Malaya Unit had launched its air operation [in Operation] L on 9 February, it was not able to conduct a sufficient air campaign against western Java.

The next day, 10 February, a revised version of the "Memorandum of the Arrangements for Operation H between the Sixteenth Army, the Third Air Force, the Third Fleet and the Eleventh Air Fleet" was concluded. The original arrangement had preliminarily been agreed at the Manila Conference and concluded on 30 January, based on the assumption that the 22d Air Flotilla should return to the Eleventh Air Fleet. [So,] its distinctive feature was the exclusion of the Malaya Unit (the First Southern Expeditionary Fleet).⁽⁹⁶⁾ In this arrangement, it was agreed (1) that the forces to be employed should be about 190 aircraft of the Eleventh Air Fleet, about 50 reconnaissance seaplanes of the Third Fleet, and about 179 aircraft of the [Army] Third Air Force; (2) that the Army should mainly use the Palembang [airfield], while the Mentok [airfield] should be shared by the Army and the Navy (with thirty aircraft each); that when the Tanjungkarang [airfield] was fit for use for the Army, the Mentok [airfield] would be [handed over] to the Navy for its exclusive use; that the Army might use the Ledo [airfield] for some command reconnaissance aircraft; that in addition to the Ledo [airfield], the Navy might partially use the Palembang [airfield] and share the Mentok [airfield with the Army] (to return to its exclusive use later); and (3) that the Navy should conduct its raids on [the area] to the east of 108° east.⁽⁹⁶⁾ (See the previous description.)

On 14 February (the day when the [Paratroop] Raiding Group descended on Palembang), the Third Air Force drew up an outline for the air operation [in Operation] H.⁽⁹⁶⁾ At that time, the Fifteenth Army was charging toward Rangoon in Burma, and the [Army] Fifth Air Force was supporting this operation. The Twenty-fifth Army was in the middle

of its attack on Singapore, and its subsequent operations included the northern Sumatra invasion operation. For this reason, the [Army] Third Air Force ([consisting of] the 3d, the 7th and the 12th Air Divisions, the 81st Air Group, and the 15th Independent Air Unit), which had to cooperate with [both] the Twenty-fifth and the Sixteenth Armies, set down in summary the following points in the outline of the air operations [in Operation] H:⁽⁹⁶⁾

1. In conjunction with the Navy, we shall swiftly destroy [enemy] air power in the western Java area in the wake of Operation L and [also] closely support the Sixteenth Army in the latter's operations in western Java.
2. As the airfields in Palembang and Tanjungkarang are seized and made ready for use, we shall first destroy the enemy air power in western Java (to the west of 108° east).
3. From the day before the landing [operation] of the main force of the Sixteenth Army (25 February), we shall provide cover for the convoy of the main force of the 2d Division under sail and the air defense at its anchorage, as well as directly support the main force of the Sixteenth Army in its ground combat.
4. Forces to be employed for Operation H and their operations are as follows:
 81st Air Group: shall search [for the enemy].
 12th Air Division (a fighter air division; [consisting of] one squadron of the 1st Air Group and the 11th Air Group):
 Shall destroy [enemy] air power, cover the convoy and its anchorage, and [provide] air defense.
 3d Air Division:
 Headquarters
 15th Independent Air Unit (the headquarters, the 50th and the 52d Independent Squadron — command reconnaissance aircraft)
 59th Air Group (fighter planes)
 64th Air Group (fighter planes)
 27th Air Group (minus one squadron; assault planes)
 90th Air Group (light bombers)
 75th Air Group (light bombers):
 Shall destroy [enemy] air power, directly support ground operations and cover the convoy as needed.

On that day (the 14th) the paratroop unit seized the Palembang airfield, and on the next day, the 15th, the aircraft of the 3d and the 12th Air Divisions started their advance into the Palembang [airfield]. On the same day, the Tanaka Detachment landed in Mentok and Palembang.

On the next day, the 16th, the 12th Air division headquarters also advanced to the Palembang [airfield] to which twenty army aircraft had advanced by that day.⁽¹³⁵⁾

On the next day, the 17th, the 3d Air Division headquarters also advanced into Palembang, which increased the number of the army aircraft advanced to the airfield by this day to twenty-nine.^(98, 135) About the situation of both the Mentok and the Ledo airfields, however, one could only be pessimistic. Although a total of 8,091 men had been employed [for readying] the Ledo airfield during a total period of twenty-one days by that day, the condition of the airfield as of that day was as previously described [p. 306].⁽²³⁾ Although on that day the Malaya Unit passed down an order to the 22d Air Flotilla to advance its aircraft to the Ledo airfield for the first time, it was just a pitiful order that [only] one squadron should be advanced to Ledo as soon as possible from the 19th onwards.⁽¹³⁵⁾ A

hurried preparation was also going on at the Mentok airfield, but for the time being it could not be put to use. Out of necessity, the Malaya Unit on that day requested the [Army] Third Air Force to allow twenty naval aircraft to advance to the Palembang [airfield].⁽¹³⁵⁾

However, on the next day, the 18th, the Third Air Force rejected the request.⁽¹³⁵⁾ The Palembang airfield was not large enough either, and neither the convoy nor the necessary matériel had reached Palembang (the former arrived on the afternoon of the 20th). The situation of the units for [Operation] H of the [Army] Third Air Force was that [finally] all but the 75th Air Group managed to advance there by that day.⁽⁹⁶⁾ The situation at the Mentok airfield as of that night was that “for the present [a runway of] seventy meters wide and seven hundred meters long has been completed, and its extension to one thousand meters in length is expected to be completed in several days, [but] the ground is quite bumpy.”⁽¹¹⁸⁾ It meant that the airfield would remain unavailable for the time being.

On the next day, the 19th, the [Army] Third Air Force launched its air operation [in Operation] H from Palembang. A total of twenty-four aircraft of the 59th, the 64th and the 90th Air Groups conducted a raid on Buitenzorg [Bogor] in the morning, and [a total of] thirty-seven aircraft on Bandung in the afternoon. They reported a military gain of bringing down nineteen [enemy] aircraft in total (three of which uncertain), and nine [enemy] aircraft destroyed by fire; one [of the Japanese] aircraft did not return.⁽⁹⁶⁾ On that day, the [Army] Third Air Force discovered the Gelumbang airfield and reported it to the Eleventh Air Fleet.⁽¹³⁵⁾ It was the day when the Air Unit (i.e. the Eleventh Air Fleet) took over the command of the 22d Air Flotilla and started giving directions to it as the [Navy] 3d Air Raid Unit.⁽¹³⁵⁾

On the next day, the 20th, the 3d Air Raid Unit was still at its bases in Kuching, Kuantan and Thủ Dầu Một (in French Indochina). The Navy side had become extremely worried. On that day, the 22d Air Flotilla wired a request to the Eleventh Air Fleet: “As for the Ledo [airfield], we have made efforts to accumulate fuel and ammunition both by sea and by land, but we barely managed to accumulate [enough] fuel and ammunition for a single sortie of twenty-seven land-based attack planes; there is no prospect of progress in the accumulation [of fuel and ammunition] in the future, and the airfield is in no good condition either; furthermore, it is unlikely that fuel and ammunition can be transported to Gelumbang in time; we request [you to take measures] so that we can make use of the Palembang [airfield].”⁽¹³⁵⁾ Unable to remain indifferent to the 22d Air Flotilla’s predicament, Cdr. Naitō Takeshi, a staff officer of the Malaya Unit, on that day visited the Southern Army to request that the Navy share the Palembang [airfield].⁽²⁴⁾ However, the Army rejected this, saying, “The Palembang [airfield] has no capacity to spare [for the Navy]. We would like you to make the Gelumbang [airfield] ready and use it, for which the Army shall provide cooperation.”⁽²⁴⁾ [Also] on that day, the Tanaka Detachment seized Tanjungkarang. The preparation work was [still] going on at the Mentok [airfield]. On that day as well, the [Army] Third Air Force conducted a raid on Kalijati from Palembang with a total of thirty aircraft of the 59th, the 64th and the 90th Air Groups, and reported a military gain of eight [enemy] aircraft destroyed by fire.⁽⁹⁶⁾

On the next day, the 21st, the Eleventh Air Fleet again wired to the [Army] Third Air Force, requesting: “It is difficult to have the entire force of the [Navy] Kanoya Air Group use the Ledo [airfield]. Despite the absolute necessity to launch an air campaign on the

25th for the sake of the Java landing [operation] scheduled for the 26th, the [accumulation of] fuel and ammunition is far from ready at the Gelumbang [airfield]. We would like your reconsideration of sharing the Palembang [airfield].”⁽¹³⁵⁾ However, the [Army] Third Air Force could not afford to accept this. On that day, the 22d Air Flotilla sent an aircraft to survey the Palembang and the Gelumbang [airfields]; (it returned on the 23d).⁽¹³⁵⁾ The Mentok [airfield] was still in the process of preparation. On this day as well, Staff Officer Itoda found the Tanjungkarang airfield, but it turned out to have [a runway of] no more than 700 meters in length.⁽³⁹⁾ Also on that day, the Third Air Force carried out a raid on Kalijati and Bandung from Palembang with a total of forty-four aircraft of the 59th, the 64th and the 90th Air Groups, and reported a military gain of six [enemy] aircraft destroyed by fire and [also] the loss of one [Japanese] aircraft.⁽⁹⁶⁾

On the next day, the 22d, the commanders of the Southern Task Force and the Dutch East Indies Unit held talks at Staring Bay.⁽¹¹⁷⁾ The convoys were sailing straight to the south aiming to land the Sixteenth Army on Java on the night of the 25th. However, it was reported that there remained five to seven allied cruisers and about ten destroyers in Batavia and two cruisers and about five destroyers in Surabaya.⁽¹¹⁷⁾ Accordingly, Southern Task Force Commander Vice Admiral Kondō proposed to Southern Army Commander in Chief Terauchi a two-day postponement of the landing schedule and requested the latter’s co-operation in making the Gelumbang [airfield] ready.⁽¹¹⁷⁾ On that day, the [Army] Third Air Force carried out a raid on Batavia and Buitenzorg from Palembang with a total of forty-one aircraft of the 59th, the 64th and the 90th Air Groups, and reported a military gain of four [enemy] aircraft destroyed by fire.⁽⁹⁶⁾ The Mentok and the Tanjungkarang airfields were [still] in the process of being readied.

On the next day, the 23d, the Southern Army sent a telegram to the 38th Division and ordered the latter to provide the Navy with ample support in making the Gelumbang airfield ready, as mentioned previously. The convoys, which had reversed their course the day before, resumed their course southward on that day.⁽¹³⁰⁾ On that day as well, the 3d Air Raid Unit was [finally] able to advance eighteen aircraft to the Mentok [airfield] for the first time.⁽¹⁰⁴⁾ The [Army] Third Air Force [only] conducted reconnaissance and serviced its aircraft on that day.⁽⁹⁶⁾ The [Army] Third Air Force had not yet completed the advance of its entire force into the Palembang [airfield]. The Tanaka Detachment was concentrating all its efforts into making the Tanjungkarang [airfield] ready.

That was the situation on the 22d and the 23d when some of the Sixteenth Army staff officers proposed: “Shouldn’t we land on southern Sumatra and then land on Java by maneuvering [landing] craft [from there]?”

On the next day, the 24th, the convoy of the main force of the Sixteenth Army kept sailing straight to the south.

On that day (the 24th), in the eastern Java area, the 1st and the 2d Air Raid Units attacked Surabaya with a total of fifty-one land-based attack planes from Kendari, Balikpapan, and Bali, along with nine fighter planes from Bali.⁽¹⁰⁴⁾

At 0800 on that day, the convoy carrying the 48th Division and the Sakaguchi Detachment, and the 1st Escort Unit (the 4th Destroyer Squadron) departed from the temporary anchorage south of Balikpapan and sailed southward.⁽¹¹⁹⁾ [Also] at 0800, the *Tomozuru* and the *Sasakomaru* left Makassar for Banjarmasin.⁽¹¹⁹⁾ The *Teiryū-maru* and the *Nisshō-maru* [*Hiteru-maru*]

led by [Army] Major Takagi joined [the convoy of the 48th Division] at 1600,⁽⁸⁸⁾ which increased the convoy to forty-two ships in total. The main unit of the Dutch East Indies Unit and the 1st Base Unit were taking up positions for the 2d Bali disembarkation operation (on the 25th). On that day (the 24th), the 5th Destroyer Squadron unit departed from Staring Bay at 1200, the 1st Section of the 7th Destroyer Division from the sea off the coast of Dili at 0830, and the *Jintsū* and the 16th Destroyer Division, which were directly led by the 2d Destroyer Squadron commander, from Kupang at 1200, and sailed westward.⁽¹¹⁷⁾ On that day as well, Vice Admiral Takahashi, commander of the Dutch East Indies Unit, specifically sent telegrams to the commanders of the 5th Cruiser Division and the 2d Destroyer Squadron to instruct them to quickly advance into the Java Sea.^(114, 117)

In the western Java area, the 3d Escort Unit (the 5th Destroyer Squadron) was sailing south, while [simultaneously] refueling ([with fuel brought] from the Anambas Islands) and escorting the main force of the Sixteenth Army.⁽¹²⁰⁾ Although allied submarine(s) appeared, no damage was incurred. The 7th Cruiser Division (the heavy cruisers *Kumano*, *Suzuya*, *Mikuma* and *Mogami*) and the 19th Destroyer Division (the *Uranami*, the *Isonami* and the *Shikinami*) left the Anambas Islands at 1800 and sailed south in order to support the 3d Escort Unit.⁽¹¹⁵⁾ They were under the command of Malaya Unit Commander Vice Admiral Ozawa. On that day (the 24th), the Third Air Force carried out an attack on Bandung and Kalijati from Palembang with a total of sixty aircraft of the 59th, the 64th, the 75th and the 90th Air Groups in the morning, and on Batavia and Cililitan from Palembang with fifty-nine aircraft in the afternoon, and reported a military gain of bringing down eleven [enemy] aircraft (three of which uncertain) and twenty [enemy] aircraft destroyed by fire.⁽⁹⁶⁾ That morning Vice Admiral Kondō, commander in chief of the Southern Task Force, requested the commander in chief of the Eleventh Air Fleet and the commander of the Malaya Unit to accelerate [the work to] make the Gelumbang base ready and to let the Mihoro Air Group (which had been kept under the command of the Malaya Unit) participate in the air operation against Java as follows. On that day, the 3d Air Raid Unit was able to advance thirty-nine aircraft to Gelumbang for the first time.⁽¹³⁵⁾

From: Chief of Staff, Second Fleet

sent at 1030 on the 24th

Now the date of the landings on Java is approaching. If we do not get an opportunity to destroy the enemy surface forces in the Java Sea area, it will have a great impact on the conduct of the landing operations. Therefore, [adequate] military gains are keenly desired from the air operations in these few days. In view of the fact that the Army has offered its cooperation and taking into account the situation of the Gelumbang base as well, I would like you to be determined to promptly destroy the [enemy] naval vessels and aircraft in the area prior to the execution of the landings, while accelerating the preparation of the base as much as possible and making use of it. Further, as the transport convoy is now under sail and the landing date has already been postponed by two days in order to intensify the air operation, we are in a situation where no further postponement shall be allowed. Therefore, I would like you to see to it that the Mihoro Air Group will conduct [air] attacks on the enemy naval vessels in the western Java area with its full force.

On the next day, the 25th, one large cruiser, three light cruisers, five destroyers, several smaller naval vessels of the enemy and thirty or more commercial ships were spotted in Surabaya, and one cruiser and more than a dozen commercial ships were spotted in Batavia.⁽¹¹⁷⁾

In the eastern Java area, twenty-two land-based attack planes and nine fighter planes conducted a raid on Surabaya respectively from Balikpapan and Bali on that day (the 25th). At 0800 the 1st Base Unit reached Bali and started the second disembarkation.⁽¹²⁴⁾ After supporting this [operation], the main unit of the Dutch East Indies Unit returned to Makassar in the evening.⁽¹⁰³⁾ The convoy carrying the 48th Division and the main force of the Sakaguchi Detachment, and the 1st Escort Unit continued sailing southward and entered the Java Sea through the waters between the islands of Moresses and Matasiri (See Illustration No. 46) around 2200 that night.⁽¹¹⁹⁾ The *Sasako-maru*, which was escorted by the *Tomozuru*, arrived at the anchorage south of Banjarmasin at 0900 on that day, and the Yamamoto Regiment started its embarkation.⁽¹¹⁹⁾ The 5th Cruiser Division (the *Nachi* and the *Haguro*), the *Yamakaze* and the *Kawakaze* entered the Java Sea.⁽¹¹⁴⁾ The *Jintsū* of the 2d Destroyer Squadron, the 16th Destroyer Division and the 1st Section of the 7th Destroyer Division arrived in Makassar in the afternoon and left the port at 1900 after replenishing to sail westward.⁽¹¹⁷⁾ On that day, the Carrier Task Force, the 2d Submarine Squadron, and the main force of the Southern Task Force left Staring Bay for the sea south of Java.⁽¹⁰³⁾

In the western Java area, the convoy of the main force of the Sixteenth Army and the 3d Escort Unit passed through the Karimata Strait around 1600 and entered the Java Sea on that day (the 25th).⁽¹²⁰⁾ The 7th Cruiser Division and the 19th Destroyer Division (the *Shikinami*, the *Uranami* and the *Isonami*) were sailing south behind them.⁽¹¹⁵⁾ On that day, a reconnaissance aircraft of the 22d Air Flotilla reported: “[Spotted] one Type-A cruiser, two Type-B cruisers, and five destroyers in the Batavia port at 1105. [Spotted] one Type-B cruiser and one gunboat sailing northward through the Sunda Strait at 1130.”⁽¹¹⁵⁾ On that day, the [Army] Third Air Force carried out a raid on Kalijati from Palembang with a total of twenty-eight aircraft of the 64th and the 75th Air Groups, and again with a total of twenty-eight aircraft of the 59th and the 90th Air Groups, and reported a military gain of seven [enemy] planes in total destroyed by fire.⁽⁹⁶⁾ The [Army] Third Air Force reported that its military gains from 19 to 25 February aggregated to bringing down thirty-three planes, damaging or destroying by fire fifty-three planes, and half or lightly damaging 125 planes.⁽⁹⁶⁾ On that day, one squadron of the 11th Air Group advanced to the Tanjungkarang [airfield] for the first time.⁽⁹⁹⁾ [Also] on that day, forty-four aircraft and fifteen aircraft of the 3d Air Raid Unit reconnoitered and attacked Batavia respectively from Gelumbang and Mentok.⁽¹⁰⁴⁾ On that day, the commander in chief of the Eleventh Air Fleet sent telegrams of appreciation to the [Army] Third Air Force and the 38th Division for their cooperation in the preparation of the Gelumbang [airfield].⁽¹³⁵⁾

In the early morning of the next day, the 26th, the Air Unit (i.e. the Eleventh Air Fleet) judged: “the air campaign on eastern Java since 18 February has brought down forty-three [enemy] planes (eleven of which uncertain) and damaged or destroyed by fire forty-eight [enemy] planes.”⁽¹¹⁷⁾ The military gains of the [Army] Third Air Force since the 19th were as previously mentioned, and that morning the [Army] Third Air Force judged: “the number of aircraft left in western Java are between twenty and thirty aircraft,”⁽⁹⁶⁾ whereas the [Navy] Air Unit (the Eleventh Air Fleet) the same morning judged: “the remaining [enemy] aircraft in Java are about fifty fighter planes, about forty bombers, and about twenty flying boats, and they have started using guerrilla tactics.”⁽¹¹⁷⁾ The Air Unit (the Eleventh Air Fleet) further advanced thirty aircraft of the main unit of the 3d [Naval] Air Group into Bali that day, the 26th, the intention of which was to rapidly clear and destroy the [remaining] allied aircraft.⁽¹¹⁷⁾ Accordingly, the headquarters of the 23d Air Flotilla also advanced into Bali on that day, the

26th.⁽¹⁰⁴⁾ On that day, twenty-six land-based attack planes and eight fighter planes carried out a raid on Surabaya respectively from Makassar and Bali.⁽¹⁰⁴⁾ Around noon, the *Sasakomaru* (which had sailed from Banjarmasin carrying the Yamamoto Regiment escorted by the *Tomozuru*) joined the convoy of the 48th Division and the Sakaguchi Detachment (under escort of the 1st Escort Unit),⁽¹¹⁹⁾ which increased the number of transport ships [in the convoy] to forty-three. Around 1950 the convoy reached a spot 150 nautical miles north of Surabaya.⁽¹¹⁹⁾ The 5th Cruiser Division unit and the 2d Destroyer Squadron unit joined the convoy respectively in the morning and in the evening of the 26th.^(114, 117) That morning as well, the main unit of the Dutch East Indies Unit left Makassar and sailed westward.⁽¹⁰³⁾ Although [air] raids on Surabaya had been frequently conducted as previously described, one [enemy] heavy cruiser, two light cruisers, several destroyers and several torpedo boats were spotted anchored outside the port of Surabaya, and also two ships, which appeared to be [enemy] destroyers, were spotted sailing eastward at the north end of Surabaya [port] at 1630 on that day (the 26th).⁽¹¹⁹⁾ [Also] on that day, allied flying boat(s) approached the 1st Escort Unit and the 2d Destroyer Squadron unit from 1245 onwards for reconnoitering, which indicated a possible counterattack by the allied fleet.⁽¹¹⁹⁾

On that day (the 26th) in the western Java area, the convoy of the main force of the Sixteenth Army (under escort of the 3d Escort Unit) was sailing southward about 215 nautical miles northeast of Batavia at 0800, but changed course to 270 degrees (due west) around noon. The 7th Cruiser Division unit was supporting [the convoy] at a visible distance.^(115, 120) At 1300 the convoy of the main force of the Sixteenth Army was also approached by [reconnoitering] allied flying boats.⁽¹¹⁵⁾ On that day, the [Army] Third Air Force did not conduct its air campaign.⁽⁹⁶⁾ The [Navy] 3d Air Raid Unit covered the convoy from the Gelumbang [airfield] on that day. The 3d Air Raid Unit aircraft spotted two commercial ships and a ship which appeared to be an [enemy] destroyer to the northeast of Batavia on that day.^(103, 135)

Another One-Day Postponement of the Date of Landing and Naval Engagements (See Illustration No. 46)

The main force of the Sixteenth Army was scheduled to enter the anchorage and conduct the landing [operation] on the night of the next day, 27 February.

As we have seen, the presence of [enemy] cruisers and lesser ships in [the ports of] Batavia and Surabaya had often been reported in the last few days. In the eastern Java area, the [air] base had been advanced as far as Bali from the 20th onwards and the aircraft of the Air Unit (the Eleventh Air Fleet) were repeatedly conducting attacks, but there were no reports of the sinking of [enemy] naval vessels. As for the western Java area, the [Army] Third Air Force had started its attacks from the 19th onwards, but the attacks were limited to aerial engagements. The [Navy] 3d Air Raid Unit was [not only] late in its advance [toward the south], [but] it [also] had to cover the convoy. [So,] no sinking of [enemy] vessels was reported from this area, either. Considering this situation, the Southern Task Force (which was on the sea south of Java) decided to have the aircraft carrier *Ryūjō* (of the 4th Carrier Division), anchored at Cap Saint Jacques after participating in Operation L, provide support. At 0850 on that day, the 27th, it transmitted the order that “the Malaya Unit shall have the 4th Carrier Division (minus the 2d Section) promptly advance into the Java Sea area and support the operations of the Dutch East Indies Unit,”⁽¹²⁰⁾ which was passed down by the Malaya Unit to the 4th

Carrier Division at 1150. [However,] it was issued too late. At that moment, the convoy of the main force of the Sixteenth Army was reversing its course, avoiding the appearance of an allied fleet, which led to the situation that the date of landing had to be postponed by another day.

The Appearance of the Allied Fleet and Another One-Day Postponement of the Landing Schedule on Western Java

At 0530 on the 27th, the convoy of the main force of the Sixteenth Army reached the separating point (about 140 nautical miles north of Batavia). The convoy separated into the main force (the [Sixteenth] Army headquarters and a unit [consisting of] the 2d Division as the core in forty-nine ships) and a [separate] element (the Shōji Detachment), and each headed for its landing point.⁽¹²⁰⁾ However, on a report that an allied fleet consisting of one heavy cruiser, two light cruisers and two destroyers was sailing northward, the convoy of the main force and that of the Shōji Detachment again started reversing their courses respectively at 1028 and 1045,^(115, 120) which continued respectively until 1500 and 1800.^(115, 120) In the meantime, at the [Sixteenth] Army headquarters the concern grew that [the convoy] might run out of coal and water, and the feeling spread that it was unacceptable that the [Navy] Malaya Unit was conducting a triumphal entry into the port of Singapore on that very day.^(36, 44)

At 0900 a report was sent that “one large enemy cruiser, two light cruisers, and two destroyers have been spotted sailing southeast,” which was followed by another report at 0935 that “the enemy fleet has turned around and is heading toward us.” At that time, the situation on the [Japanese] side was as follows:^(115, 120, 130, 131, 103)

The Shōji Detachment (in seven ships): [under escort of] the light cruiser *Yura*, the 1st Section of the 6th Destroyer Division (the *Akatsuki* and the *Hibiki*), and the 2d Section of the 22d Destroyer Division (the *Nagatsuki* and the *Minazuki*).

The convoy of the [Sixteenth] Army headquarters and the 2d Division (in forty-nine ships): [under the escort of] the light cruiser *Natori*, the 1st Section of the 22d Destroyer Division (the *Fumizuki* and the *Satsuki*), the 5th Destroyer Division (the *Harukaze*, the *Hatakaze*, the *Asakaze* and the *Matsukaze*), the 11th Destroyer Division (the *Hatsuyuki*, the *Shirayuki* and the *Fubuki*), and the 12th Destroyer Division (the *Shirakumo* and the *Murakumo*).

The 7th Cruiser Division unit, [provided by] the Malaya Unit for support: the 7th Cruiser Division ([consisting of] the heavy cruisers *Kumano*, *Suzuya*, *Mikuma* and *Mogami*), the 19th Destroyer Division (the *Uranami*, the *Shikinami* and the *Isonami*) on the sea south of the convoy. The Auxiliary Seaplane Tenders *Kamikawa-maru* and *San'yō-maru*: [in] the Anambas Islands.

The aircraft carrier *Ryūjō*: at Cap Saint Jacques (scheduled to depart in the evening).

Rear Admiral Hara, commander of the 3d Escort Unit (and commander of the 5th Destroyer Squadron), assembled the flagship *Natori*, the light cruiser *Yura*, and the 5th, the 11th and the 12th Destroyer Divisions, and rushed toward the allied fleet in an attempt to destroy it in cooperation with the 7th Cruiser Division unit of the Malaya Unit.⁽¹²⁰⁾ He left six destroyers [as escort for] the convoy and had [the convoy] reverse its course.⁽¹²⁰⁾ However, the allied fleet began to sail southwestward from around 1443 onwards and then sailed away in the direction of Batavia. The Japanese pursued it, but discontinued the pursuit around 1500.^(115, 120) In the meantime, the 5th Destroyer Squadron commander wired the Sixteenth Army commander [Imamura] at 1320 that “considering the enemy’s current movements, we would like to first

destroy the enemy surface vessels before conducting the landing operations. [Accordingly,] we would like to postpone the landing date by another day.”⁽¹²⁰⁾ As we have seen from the description of the convoy’s movements, it meant that the landing date ended up being postponed by one more day.^(32, 120)

A unified command of the surface forces in this area was considered necessary, and based on the warning of the Combined Fleet issued at 1430, the telegraphic order of the Southern Task Force sent at 1600, and the Dutch East Indies Unit order given at 1800, the 7th Cruiser Division unit and the 4th Carrier Division (the *Ryūjō* and the *Shiokaze*) were incorporated into the Batavia invasion unit; the 7th Cruiser Division commander [R. Adm. Kurita Takeo] was assigned to command this unit.^(115, 120)

On that day, the 12th Air Division of the [Army] Third Air Force covered the convoy. The 3d Air Division also covered the convoy, and the aircraft of the 75th and the 90th Air Groups carried out attacks on [enemy] naval vessels as well.⁽⁹⁶⁾ On that day the [Navy] 3d Air Raid Unit conducted patrols to search for the enemy from the Mentok and the Gelumbang [airfield].⁽¹⁰⁴⁾

Naval Engagements off Surabaya, and a One-day Postponement of the Landing [Operation] on Eastern Java as well

The convoy carrying the 48th Division and the Sakaguchi Detachment had been sailing westward along the southern coast of Borneo after entering the Java Sea. At 0700 on that day (the 27th), just as it advanced into the waters south of the central part of Borneo (immediately north of Kragan), it changed its course and headed due south (in the direction of Kragan).⁽¹¹⁹⁾ [The convoy] was scheduled to enter the anchorage and land in Kragan on the night of the 27th. However, an aircraft reported that it had spotted “five enemy cruisers and six destroyers on the sea sixty-three nautical miles at 310 degrees (note by the author: northwest) of Surabaya, heading toward 80 degrees (note by the author: east-northeast) at a speed of twelve knots at 1150,” which was followed by two engagements in the afternoon and another two in the night,⁽¹¹⁹⁾ and the convoy ended up repeatedly sailing back and forth ([according to] [48th] Division Commander Tsuchihashi’s diary). In the end, that night (to be precise, at 0450 on the 28th), the Dutch East Indies Unit commander decided to postpone the landing [operation] by one day (to be carried out on the night of the 28th).⁽¹¹⁹⁾

The situation of the [Japanese] fleet in the eastern Java Sea area at the time of spotting the allied fleet was roughly as follows:^(102, 103, 114, 117, 119, 124)

The 1st Escort Unit, [consisting of] the light cruiser *Naka*, the 2d Destroyer Division (the *Murasame*, the *Samidare*, the *Harusame* and the *Yūdachi*), the 9th Destroyer Division (the *Asagumo*, the *Minegumo* and the *Natsugumo*), and the *Umikaze* of the 24th Destroyer Division, under the command of the 4th Destroyer Squadron commander, was escorting the convoy.

The 5th Cruiser Division unit, [consisting of] the 5th Cruiser Division ([with] the heavy cruisers *Nachi* and *Haguro*), the *Ushio* and the *Sazanami* of the 7th Destroyer Division, and the *Yamakaze* and the *Kawakaze* of the 24th Destroyer Division, kept its position near the convoy, prepared for support.

The 2d Destroyer Squadron unit, [consisting of] the light cruiser *Jintsū* and the 16th Destroyer Division (the *Yukikaze*, the *Tokitsukaze*, the *Amatsukaze* and the *Hatsukaze*), [also] kept its position near the convoy, prepared for support.

The Main Unit of the Dutch East Indies Unit, [consisting of] the heavy cruiser *Ashigara* and the destroyers *Ikazuchi* and *Akebono*, had left Makassar on the 26th, and was in the sea north of the Kangean Islands. The heavy cruiser *Myōkō* (which belonged to the 5th Cruiser Division, but had just returned to the southern [front] after having the damage incurred at Davao repaired on the mainland) left Makassar on the morning of the 27th after replenishing there, and was following the unit (joining the unit in the evening).

The 1st Base Unit, [consisting of] the light cruisers *Nagara* and *Kinu* ([the latter of which] was the flagship of the 4th Submarine Squadron, and which had joined the unit on the 26th), the 8th Destroyer Division (the *Asashio* and the *Arashio*), and the 21st Destroyer Division (the *Wakaba*, the *Nenohi* and the *Hatsushimo*) was covering the second disembarkation [operation] on Bali.

The seaplane tenders *Mizuho* (was sailing west from Timor), and *Chitose* (was sailing south from Jolo), and the auxiliary seaplane tender *Sanuki-maru* (had been damaged and anchored at Balikpapan, but its seaplanes were stationed in Makassar).

From 1230 onwards, the full force of the 5th Cruiser Division unit ([consisting of] two heavy cruisers and four destroyers), the full force of the 2d Destroyer Squadron unit ([consisting of] one light cruiser and four destroyers), and the main force of the 4th Destroyer Squadron unit ([consisting of] one light cruiser and six destroyers) headed for the allied fleet to make an attack. The allied fleet was made up of two heavy cruisers, three light cruisers and eight or nine destroyers, and it was superior [to the Japanese forces] in terms of cruiser strength. At 1300, the convoy [carrying the eastern Java landing unit] changed its course to the west. As an aircraft report sent at 1455 said that the allied fleet seemed to be sailing away toward Surabaya, the convoy resumed its course for the landing point in Kragan at 1500. However, the allied fleet [again started] sailing north from 1523 onwards, and was approaching the convoy. At 1745, the first daytime engagement began with a naval gun duel. The 5th Cruiser Division commander, who was leading all the units under his unified command, planned to lure the allied fleet into a night engagement in order to destroy it at a stroke by displaying his torpedo strength, because the [Japanese] naval gun strength was inferior. However, around 1830, the distance between the convoy and the [allied] fleet was reduced to about twenty nautical miles. About 1834, the 4th Destroyer Squadron commander ordered the convoy to sail westward. At 1837, the 5th Cruiser Division Commander ordered: "All, Charge!" At 1839, the [Japanese] fleet all at once took a left turn and commenced the attack, which was the beginning of the second daytime engagement. The allied fleet was thrown into disorder. The [Japanese] units pursued them, while firing and launching torpedo attacks. At 2005, [the Japanese units] stopped the pursuit, judging that it was dangerous to come close to the area near Surabaya where mines had been laid and because night came on. During this engagement, three allied destroyers were sunk. Meanwhile after shifting to the attack, the 4th Destroyer Squadron commander had the convoy sail south [again] by ordering at 1903: "We have sunk three enemy destroyers and are in the middle of pursuit. The convoy shall sail toward the predetermined landing point." The allied fleet turned around again as night fell; about 2100, naval gun fire was exchanged for a short period, but the [Japanese units] let them slip away (the first night engagement). At 0033, the silhouettes of four warships were spotted. [The Japanese units] sank one ship, caused a large fire on another, and attacked and pursued the other two, but the units became sure by 0245 that they had let the [allied] ships slip away (the second night engagement). Due to the occurrence of these night engagements, the con-

voy, which had resumed its southward sailing at 1903, again reversed its course and was heading northward.^(114, 117, 119)

During these engagements, the Dutch East Indies Unit commander ordered the unit that was in the middle of the second Bali disembarkation operation to send its forces [to support the Java landing operation], while he himself sailed westward leading his main unit. From the Bali operation unit, the light cruiser *Kinu* and the 8th Destroyer Division (the *Asashio* and the *Arashio*) sailed westward.^(103, 124)

At 0310, the 5th Cruiser Division commander, who had fought a total of four naval battles [two] during the day and [two] at night, commanding the 2d and 4th Destroyer Squadrons as well, offered as his opinion to the Dutch East Indies Unit commander: "Considering the remaining enemy surface forces, I judge it better to postpone the starting date of the landing [operation] by one day. [Our] convoy seems to be still up north evading [the battles]." [According to Vol. 26, p. 460, the suggestion was made by Rear Admiral Nishimura, commander of the 4th Destroyer Squadron.] At 0450, a "no objections" reply was sent. Thus, the landing [operation] on eastern Java was postponed by one day, just like that on western Java.^(114, 117, 119)

The Carrier Task Force ([consisting of] the aircraft carriers *Akagi*, *Kaga*, *Sōryū* and *Hiryū*, the battleships *Hiei* and *Kirishima*, the heavy cruisers *Tone* and *Chikuma*, the light cruiser *Abukuma*, and the destroyers *Tanikaze*, *Isokaze*, *Hamakaze*, *Urakaze*, *Shiranui*, *Kasumi*, *Ariake* and *Yūgure*), which had left Staring Bay at 0830 on the 25th, and the main force of the Southern Task Force (the battleships *Kongō*, and *Haruna*, the heavy cruisers *Atago* and *Takao*, and the destroyers *Arashi*, *Nowaki* and *Hayashio*; in addition, the *Oyashio*, the *Hayashio* and the *Kuroshio* had joined the force from Timor), which had left the bay following the fleet, had already advanced into the waters southeast of Java on that day. [Editor's note: There seem to be some mix-ups in this list, compared to the data in Volume 26.] At 1200 on that day (the 27th), the 2d Air Raid Unit sent a telegram, which said: "According to an aircraft report, one [enemy] light cruiser, six destroyers, and about forty commercial ships were spotted in the port of Cilacap, and one commercial ship and three destroyers outside the port as of 1130."^(103, 116, 123)

On that day (the 27th), the 1st and 2d Air Raid Units provided the escort for the convoy of the unit to capture eastern Java as well as the escort for the 2d Bali disembarkation unit, and [also] conducted search and attack missions on the enemy in eastern Java, the Indian Ocean, etc., from Banjarmasin, Bali, Kupang and other bases. They spotted the aircraft carrier *Langley* (with thirty-two P-40 aircraft on its flight deck) in the sea south of Java at 1315 and sank it at 1340.⁽¹⁰³⁾

In the naval engagements on that day, the 27th (the naval engagement off Surabaya), the loss that the allied forces sustained was the Dutch cruisers *HNLMS De Ruyter* and *HNLMS Java*, the British destroyer *HMS Electra*, and the Dutch destroyer *HNLMS Kortenaer*, which were sunk, and the British cruiser *HMS Exeter*, which was damaged.

Entry into the Anchorage, Start of the Landings and Naval Engagements

(See Illustration No. 46)

The Western Java Area

At 0120 on the 28th, the 5th Destroyer Squadron commander sent a telegraphic order: "The *Yura* shall return to its original unit. Each unit shall operate as scheduled." The *Natori* and other ships joined the unit for Area No. 1 (Bantam Bay and Merak) at 0415 and the *Yura* joined

the unit for Area No.2 (Patrol) at 0500, and they headed for the landing points. The aircraft of the 3d Air Raid Unit reconnoitered the Batavia port in the morning and spotted only fifteen large commercial ships. It was judged that the [enemy] cruisers and lesser ships of the day before had escaped. However at 1200, one cruiser and one destroyer (according to allied military history materials, they were the U.S. heavy cruiser *USS Houston* and the Australian light cruiser *HMAS Perth*, which had participated in the naval battles off Surabaya the day before) were spotted sailing westward on the waters forty-eight nautical miles south of the [Japanese] heavy cruisers *Kumano* and *Suzuya*. The *Kumano* and the *Suzuya* hurried toward them at full speed, but receiving an aircraft report at 1417, which said "one Glasgow-Type and one light cruiser stopped at a spot ten nautical miles at 20 degrees (note by the author: north-northeast) of Batavia," they judged that the allied fleet had already entered the anchorage of Batavia, and reversed their course toward north at 1450. At 1700, the 7th Cruiser Division commander wired: "One [enemy] heavy cruiser and one light cruiser are [spotted] anchored outside the Batavia port, and one light cruiser (note: according to a later study, a destroyer) inside the port."^(115, 120)

At 2020, the Area No.1 unit was separated into [sections for] Sectors A (south side of Merak), B (north side of Merak) and C (Bantam Bay), and headed for the waters off the coast of their respective sectors. At 2245, air reconnaissance of the Batavia area as of 2000 reported: "(1) one large [enemy] cruiser moored at the wharf, one light cruiser anchored inside the breakwater, and other than these, three flying boats; (2) one [enemy] gunboat and two patrol boats patrolling at the mouth of the bay; (3) one [enemy] destroyer and one large transport ship sailing westward through the channel north of Cape Kait, and (4) one [enemy] submarine going eastward [also] through the above channel."^(115, 120)

The Area No.2 unit was approached and bombed by two allied aircraft at a point about thirty nautical miles north of Patrol around 2120, but having sustained no damage, it continued sailing south.⁽¹²⁰⁾

At 0000 on 1 March, the convoy of [the units to land in] the Bantam Bay area entered the anchorage and the 1st landing unit started landing at 0030. [The convoy of the units to land in] the Merak area entered the anchorage at 0000 and succeeded in landing at 0145. [The convoy of the units to land in] the Patrol area entered the anchorage at 0140 and succeeded in landing at 0400.^(115, 120)

When the Bantam Bay area convoy was executing the landing operation, the *Fubuki*, which was in its patrol area north of Bantam Bay, spotted two allied cruisers (the U.S. heavy cruiser *USS Houston* and the Australian light cruiser *HMAS Perth*) at 0015. The [Japanese] heavy cruisers *Mikuma* and *Mogami*, the light cruisers *Natori* and *Yura*, and the destroyers *Harukaze*, *Hatakaze*, *Asakaze*, *Fubuki*, *Shirayuki*, *Shirakumo*, *Murakumo* and others intercepted them, and the naval battle off Batavia began. [The Japanese] sank both cruisers and, in addition, sank the Dutch destroyer *HNLMS Evertsen* at a point west of Sebuk Island on the same day. The loss sustained on the Japanese side was one minesweeper and one transport ship sunk, several transport ships running aground and heavily damaged, and other minor damage.^(115, 120)

On the 28th, the [Army] Third Air Force covered the convoy with the 3d and the 12th Air Divisions. On that day (the 28th), Sixteenth Army Staff Officer Itoda requested from Tanjungkarang that the Southern Army temporarily assign three aircraft to the direct support [of the operations of the Sixteenth Army], but the Southern Army rejected it on 1 March, saying that it had no extra strength to spare.^(96, 99)

On the 28th, the [Navy] 3d Air Raid Unit searched for the enemy. At 0900 on 1 March, due to the bad weather and the bad condition of the airfield in Kuching, the unit requested the [Army] Third Air Force to provide the guarding of the sky over the anchorage of the Shōji Detachment, only to receive a reply that it wanted to [just] carry out the tasks as agreed in the arrangements, because it had no extra strength to spare after being day after day in action.⁽¹³⁵⁾

The Eastern Java Area and the Sea South of Java

The 4th Destroyer Squadron continued sailing northward while positioning itself southeast of the convoy which carried the 48th Division and the Sakaguchi Detachment, and guarding it. Then, about 0500 on the 28th, it received the telegram from the Dutch East Indies Unit, saying: "No objection to postpone the landing [operation] by one day." It passed down its order to the transport convoy: "Move so as to reach at 1200 today, the 28th, [the spot] you were at 1200 on the 27th." [Then] it approached the convoy, and returned to the [original] escort formation at 0750. The main unit of the Dutch East Indies Unit (the heavy cruisers *Ashigara* and *Myōkō*, and the destroyers *Ikazuchi* and *Akebono*) joined the 5th Cruiser Division and the 2d Destroyer Squadron at 0730. The light cruiser *Kinu* (the flagship of the 4th Submarine Squadron) and the 8th Destroyer Division (the *Asashio*), which both had shifted their positions from the support of the second Bali disembarkation operation [to the Java landing operation], joined the escort of the convoy at 1330 and sailed south along with the convoy and the 4th Destroyer Squadron unit. Despite the persistent approach of allied flying boats from 1640 to 1810, the convoy continued sailing south, changed into the formation to enter the anchorage at 2010, and kept going further south.^(114, 117, 119)

From 0145 on 1 March onwards, the convoy came under persistent bombardment from about ten dive-bombers. The *Tokushima-maru* ran aground on the coast due to flooding caused by a hit at close range, while the *Johore-maru*, which took a direct hit and sustained a loss of some 150 casualties and other damage, had no [serious] damage to its hull and engine and continued sailing; it entered the anchorage at Kragan at 0235 as scheduled. Even after entering the anchorage, allied aircraft kept repeatedly bombing [the convoy] while dropping flares, and three [enemy] torpedo boats [also] invaded the anchorage (one of which was sunk and the other two were destroyed). [Then] after daybreak, [enemy] fighter planes came strafing [the convoy]. However, the 1st landing unit of the 48th Division successfully landed at 0400.^(114, 117, 119)

In the meantime, on the evening of the 28th, an aircraft report came, saying: "At 1640, two enemy light cruisers were [spotted] at the northern entrance of [the port of] Surabaya, sailing in northeastern direction." The report made the 5th Cruiser Division and the 2d Destroyer Squadron unit take positions to intercept [a possible attack], but they returned to the patrol area as night came on.^(114, 117, 119)

At 1103 on 1 March, the 5th Cruiser Division unit spotted the allied cruisers and destroyers. The 5th Cruiser Division unit ([consisting of] the heavy cruisers *Nachi* and *Haguro*, and the destroyers *Yamakaze* and *Kawakaze*) and the main unit of the Dutch East Indies Unit (the heavy cruisers *Ashigara* and *Myōkō*, and the destroyers *Ikazuchi* and *Akebono*) made a pincer attack and sank all of them. That is, the British Type-A cruiser *HMS Exeter* was sunk at 1250, the British destroyer *HMS Encounter* at 1330, and the U.S. destroyer *USS Pope* at 1540.^(103, 114)

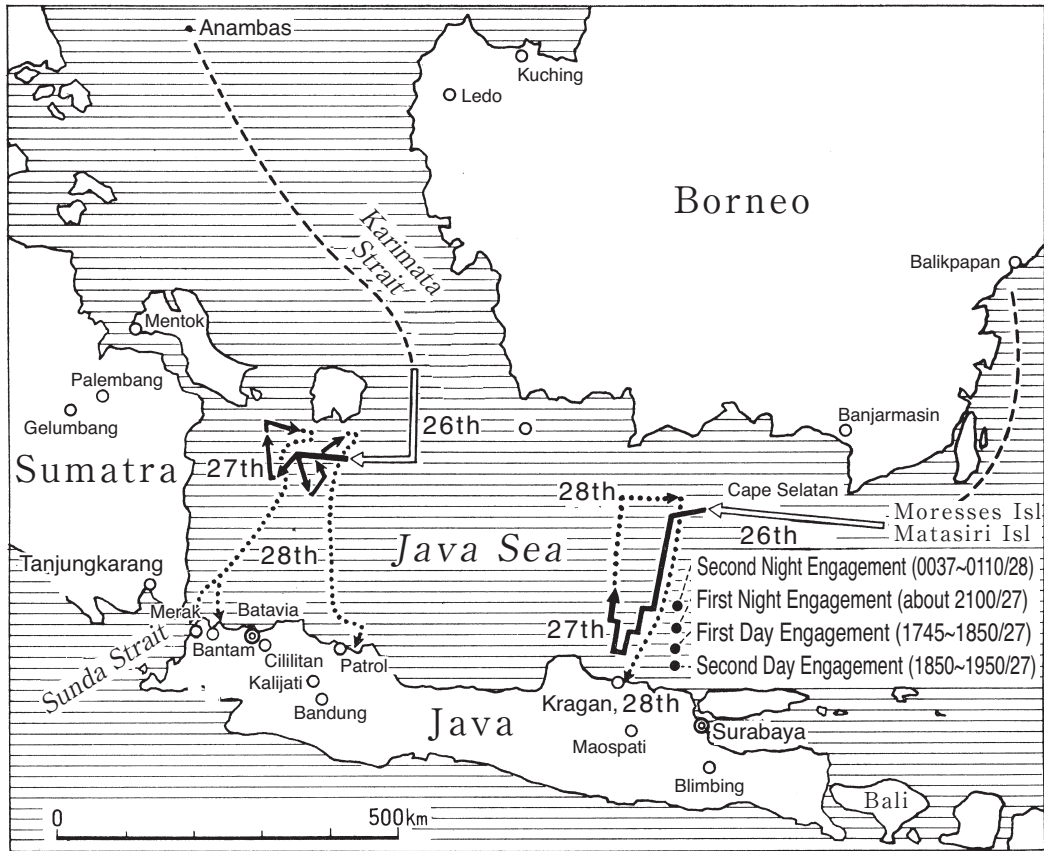


Illustration No. 46 — The Situation From 26 Through 28 February

On the 28th, in addition to covering the convoy as well as the Bali base and searching for the enemy, the [Navy] 2d Air Raid Unit conducted an air raid on the Maospati airfield with thirteen aircraft, the Blimbing and the Surabaya airfield with sixteen aircraft, and the Tanjung Priok airfield with nine aircraft from the Bali base.⁽¹⁰⁴⁾

The Carrier Task Force and the main force of the Southern Task Force (whose strengths were already described) caught allied warships escaping from Cilacap in the area south of Java from 1 through 4 March and reported a military gain of sinking one British destroyer, two U.S. destroyers, one U.S. gunboat, one British minesweeper and eleven transport ships, and seizing four transport ships.⁽¹⁰²⁾

3. Operations of the Main Force of the [Sixteenth] Army

(1) The Operation Plans

The Operation Plan of the [Sixteenth] Army (See Illustrations No. 47 and No. 48)

The distances between the landing points of the Sixteenth Army were great: as the crow flies, about two hundred kilometers between the landing point of the main force of the [Sixteenth] Army and that of the Shōji Detachment, and about four hundred kilometers between that of

the Shōji Detachment and that of the 48th Division and the Sakaguchi Detachment. So were the distances between their respective targets: the distance between the target of the main force of the [Sixteenth] Army (Bandung) and that of the Sakaguchi Detachment (Cilacap) was about 180 kilometers, and [the distance between] the target of the Sakaguchi Detachment and that of the 48th Division (Surabaya) was about four hundred kilometers. Therefore, the Sixteenth Army anticipated that after the landings it would be difficult to manage the units in a unified manner (in particular the Sakaguchi Detachment and the 48th Division), or to provide timely and proper operation instructions.^(35, 36) For this reason, measures were taken in order to provide the independently operating corps and detachment with units and equipment adapted to the needs of their mission, to provide them with specific operational directives, and assign [dedicated] staff officers to them.^(35, 36) [The Sixteenth Army] Operations Staff Officer Yamashita was attached to the Shōji Detachment, which would operate in close connection with the main force of the [Sixteenth] Army (i.e. the 2d Division), and Intelligence Staff Officer Kuriya and Line-of-Communication Staff Officer Nishiura [of the Sixteenth Army] were attached to the 48th Division.^(35, 36) No staff officer [of the Sixteenth Army] was attached to the Sakaguchi Detachment, because the detachment, which consisted of just two battalions as the core, already had its trusted Staff Officer Yano.

As we have seen previously, the operations of the Sixteenth Army had been planned in outline as follows:^(35, 36, 96)

1. According to the plan, the 48th Division should land in Kragan, seize the crossing point over the Solo River, the Cepu oil field and Rembang, after which [the division] should send one element eastward along the coastal area to contain the allied forces in the Surabaya area, while having its main force make a long detour far to the south, divide [the enemy forces in] Malang and Surabaya, and seize Surabaya.

The Surabaya stronghold was considered quite strong. [It was known that] there were fortifications in Porong, which was midway between Malang, a garrison town and the seat of the eastern Java territorial headquarters of the Dutch East Indies Army, and Surabaya. The concerns were, among others, how [the operations] would be affected by these [factors], and what would happen if the allied forces took offensive action.

2. According to the plan, the Sakaguchi Detachment ([consisting of] two infantry battalions as the core) would land in Kragan, charge toward Cilacap, and seize the city.

It was judged certain that a central Java territorial headquarters (a divisional headquarters) of the Dutch East Indies Army was newly established in Magelang. However, it was expected that the Sakaguchi Detachment, though small in number of troops, was powerful enough to travel the long distance of three hundred and some tens of kilometers, while defeating the allied forces along the way. The point of concern was Cilacap. It was not only an important port and the one and only rear gate of Java, it was also located close to Bandung, the [enemy] base of operations in Java, and it was connected to the United States, Britain and Australia by sea.

3. According to the plan, the main force of the [Sixteenth] Army (the 2d Division and the Shōji Detachment) should capture western Java, the base and center of the allied forces. Its targets were Batavia, the capital [of the Dutch East Indies], and Bandung, the military headquarters of Java. It was considered certain that Bandung would come to serve as both the military and political center when the [Japanese] operations progressed. It was considered a matter of course to seize first Batavia and then Bandung. It was also thought not unlikely that a decisive battle might occur ahead of [the operation to] seize Batavia.

In the Batavia and the Bandung operations, Buitenzorg [Bogor] and Kalijati were strategically significant. Buitenzorg [Bogor] was a key location that would enable [the Japanese] to di-

vide [the allied forces in] Batavia and Bandung in case they attached importance to Batavia. Further, regardless of whether they attached importance to Batavia or not, it was [still] vital because it could not only be used in attacking [both] Bandung and Batavia, but it would also, and in particular, enable [the Japanese army] to launch a coup de main against Bandung from the west. Kalijati was a strategic point which would enable [the Japanese] to command the communication route between Bandung and Batavia at the north of the Bandung stronghold. It would [also] enable [the Japanese] to advance a large number of aircraft at an early stage. In addition, it was a strategic point that would facilitate the preparations to seize the Bandung stronghold from the north. In order to completely cut off the road between Bandung and Batavia, it was necessary to seize the crossing point over the Citarum River.

The main concerns about the plans of the allied forces were how many U.S., British and Australian reinforcements had been or would be received through Cilacap, how many troops had retreated to western Java from Singapore, Sumatra and other areas, and what operations [the allied forces] would launch, taking advantage of the moment when the 2d Division and the Shōji Detachment were [still] far from each other just after the landing.

Considering these matters, the operations in the area of the main force of the [Sixteenth] Army were planned in outline as follows:

- (1) The Shōji Detachment shall land in Eretan, seize the Kalijati airfield all at once and secure [the airfield], while seizing the crossing point over the Citarum River to cut off the road connecting Batavia and Bandung. Depending on the circumstances, it shall act in concert with the 2d Division in seizing Batavia.
- (2) The 2d Division shall have one powerful unit led by the infantry group commander charge toward Buitenzorg and seize it to cut off the road connecting Bandung and Batavia, while having its main force advance into the area southwest of Batavia by heading eastward through the flatlands, and then seize Batavia.
- (3) After the seizure of Batavia, the main force of the 2d Division and the Shōji Detachment shall line up side by side north of the Bandung stronghold and attack the city.
- (4) Depending on the circumstances, the unit to seize Buitenzorg and the Shōji Detachment shall charge toward Bandung.

The tentative dates for [the operations to] seize Kalijati, Buitenzorg and Batavia were set respectively on the first, the fourth and the fifth day after the landings.⁽⁹⁶⁾

The [Sixteenth] Army commander should designate one battalion of the 2d Division as the army reserve and advance with it in the rear of the main force of the 2d Division. The [Sixteenth] Army headquarters should land at Bantam Bay before daybreak on the first day of the landings, after which it would first advance its command post to Serang.⁽⁹⁶⁾

4. The landings of the [Sixteenth] Army are planned as follows.⁽⁹⁶⁾ [The plan] indicates that [the operations to] seize Surabaya and Bandung were expected to meet with considerable difficulties, and take much time.

The area of the main force of the [Sixteenth] Army

The first landing

Fifty-four transport ships.

Day H: Start of the landing.

Day H + 4: Completion of the disembarkation of the Shōji Detachment and the Merak landing unit of the 2d Division.

Day H + 6: Completion of the disembarkation at Bantam Bay of the main force of the 2d Division and the unit under the direct control of the [Sixteenth] Army.

The second landing

Twenty-five transport ships.

Day H + 22: Start of the disembarkation at Bantam Bay (if possible, in Batavia).

The third landing

About twenty transport ships (some 100,000 tons).

No records were found about the starting date of the disembarkation, but probably it was started around Day H + 28 or later.

The 48th Division

The first landing

Thirty-nine transport ships.

Day H: Start of the landing.

Day H + 4: Completion of the disembarkation.

The second landing

About ten transport ships (some 50,000 tons).

No records were found about the starting date of the disembarkation.

Note: This was the plan as of 10 February. However, from that moment onwards the participation of the Carrier Task Force became a realistic possibility, which seems to have led to a slowdown and a natural disappearance of the preparations for the third landing of the main force of the [Sixteenth] Army and the second landing of the 48th Division.

As we have seen, the plan was that 179 aircraft of the [Army] Third Air Force, 50 of the Dutch East Indies Unit, 190 of the Eleventh Air Fleet and about 190 of the First Air Fleet (Carrier Task Force) should cooperate in the Java invasion operation of the Sixteenth Army, and that the ground operations of the main force of the Sixteenth Army should directly be supported by the [Army] Third Air Force, and those of the 48th Division by naval aircraft only.⁽⁹⁶⁾

The Operation Plan of the Shōji Detachment

The Shōji Detachment consisted of the 230th Infantry Regiment (minus one battalion), one tank squadron, one antitank gun battalion (minus two companies), one mountain artillery battalion (minus one battery), one engineer company (minus two platoons), and one anti-aircraft artillery battery as the core.^(73, 74)

An outline of the operations of the Shōji Detachment was as follows:⁽⁹⁶⁾

Operation Outline of the Shōji Detachment

1. Mission

- (1) The detachment shall land near Patrol and promptly seize the Kalijati airfield, and also gain control of the crossing point over the Citarum River in order to divide the enemy in the Bandung and the Batavia areas.
- (2) After that, the detachment shall attack Bandung from the area northeast [of the city] in concert with the 2d Division.

2. Directives

- (3) The detachment shall land in or near Patrol before daybreak on Day H and promptly seize the Kalijati airfield with one element and at the same time advance to Krawang and vicinity to divide the enemy in the Bandung and the Batavia areas.
- (4) After that, [the detachment shall] seize strategic points such as Subang, Purwakarta and Cikampek, etc. one after another, and prepare for the subsequent [operation to] seize Bandung. Depending on the circumstances, it shall have one element participate in [the operation to] seize Batavia.

- (5) Hand in hand with the advance of the main force of the 2d Division, the detachment shall advance to the area southeast of Subang, head for the area east of Bandung from the Cikramas area, and attack the enemy so as to cut off its escape route.
- (6) Depending on the circumstances, the detachment may [launch an operation to] seize Bandung in concert with the unit advancing from the Cianjur area before the arrival of the main force of the 2d Division.
- (7) After the seizure of Bandung, the detachment shall be assigned to mop up the enemy all over Java in cooperation with the 2d and the 48th Divisions.

This was the operation outline that the Sixteenth Army had shown to Detachment Commander Shōji as of 10 February. The [Sixteenth] Army attached [more] importance to the operations in Batavia and vicinity. However, as will be described later, Detachment Commander Shōji gave [more] careful consideration to [the operation against] Bandung, which was the headquarters of the allied forces. He [also] selected Eretan as the landing point, where the road ran closest to the coastline, and the tanks and motor vehicles to be used in the raid against Kalijati could be advanced more quickly.⁽⁴¹⁾ Changing the landing point to Eretan meant nothing more than landing at a point slightly to the east, but the 5th Destroyer Squadron at first objected to it, because [the change would put the landing point] closer to Surabaya.⁽⁴⁴⁾

The [transport] ships carrying the Shōji Detachment were the *Yae-maru*, the *Toyofuku-maru* [*Hōfuku-maru*], the *Calcutta-maru*, the *Glasgow-maru*, the *Suwa-maru*, the *Uchide-maru* and the *Yamazuki-maru* [*Yamatsuki-maru*], a total of seven ships. [Editor's note: three of the ships are different from the list given on p. 242.] The [landing] craft allocated to the detachment were two extra large, seventeen large and fifteen small motorized [landing] craft.⁽⁹⁶⁾

Note: The standard capacity of the extra large, large and small motorized [landing] craft was respectively 120 men, 80 men and 35 men in mild weather, and 80 men, 60 men and 25 men in rough weather.⁽⁷³⁾

The detachment commander made the following disposition of his units and assigned them their tasks based on the plan that “we shall land near Eretan before daybreak of Day H, promptly secure the Kalijati airfield, and at the same time have one element seize the crossing point over the Citarum River near Kedunggede to cut off the enemy [in] the direction of Batavia.”⁽⁷³⁾

Wakamatsu Raiding Unit (with the following core units):

- 2d Battalion of the 230th Infantry Regiment (minus the 6th Company and one machine gun platoon)
- One regimental artillery squad
- One antitank gun platoon
- 1st Squadron of the 4th Tank Regiment (minus one troop)
- One engineer company (minus two platoons)

Upon landing, the unit shall have one element push forward toward Pamanukan without missing an opportunity and secure the town as well as the river crossing point to the east of the town. [The unit shall] have its main force promptly advance to the Kalijati airfield along the Patrol – Pamanukan – Subang road, secure the airfield, and help the ground unit of the air unit in making the airfield ready, while guarding it. The unit to seize Pamanukan shall leave one platoon [in the town] until the reserve unit advances [there].

Egashira Raiding Unit (with the following core units):

1st Battalion of the 230th Infantry Regiment (minus the 4th Company and one machine gun platoon)

One antitank gun company (minus one platoon)

One tank troop

One mountain artillery battery

One independent engineer platoon

Following the departure of the Wakamatsu Raiding Unit, the unit shall promptly advance to Kedunggede along the Batavia road, seize the bridge there to cut off the escape route of the enemy in Batavia, while securing a point for the main force of the [Sixteenth] Army to advance. [The unit] shall [also] make preparations so as to subsequently act in concert with the main force of the [Sixteenth] Army to seize Batavia. In addition, the unit shall have one element seize Cikampek and guard the rear [of the Japanese forces] facing Bandung, while cutting off the escape route of the enemy in Cilamaya and vicinity.

Artillery Unit:

3d Battalion of the 38th Mountain Artillery Regiment (minus two batteries)

The unit shall depart following the Egashira Battalion to catch up with the Wakamatsu Raiding Unit. At least one section of the unit shall accompany the Wakamatsu Raiding Unit.

Antiaircraft Artillery Unit (one battery).

Disembarkation Working Unit ([consisting of] one independent engineer company (minus one platoon) led by Major Watanabe of the 40th Anchorage headquarters as the core)

Signal Communication Unit (omitted by the author).

Motor Transport Unit (two companies (minus one platoon)).

The main force shall transport the Wakamatsu Raiding Unit, and one element the Egashira Raiding Unit.

Ōno Unit:

Commander: Lt. Col. Ōno Takeo, commander of the 2d Independent Antitank Gun Battalion

2d Independent Antitank Gun Battalion headquarters

6th Company of the 230th Infantry Regiment

One machine gun platoon

One regimental artillery squad

Upon landing, one element shall promptly seize Eretan and cover the left side of the landing point, while the main force shall work on the tasks at the landing point.

Reserve Corps:

Infantry Artillery Unit (minus two squads) of the 230th Infantry Regiment, led by 1st Lt. Wada Toshimichi, commander of the unit

4th Company

One machine gun platoon

It shall assemble in Patrol.

The detachment commander shall go ashore along with the 2d landing unit. [He shall] first go to Patrol and then to Pamanukan. After that, he is scheduled to advance to Kalijati.

Airfield Unit (under the direction [of the detachment]):

24th Airfield Battalion (minus one element) led by the battalion commander

One element of the 28th Airfield Battalion

One element of the 1st Air Signal Regiment

One meteorological observation detail of the 4th Meteorological Company

One motor transport platoon

One ground duty platoon

Following on the advance of the Wakamatsu Raiding Unit, the unit shall promptly advance to the Kalijati airfield. After that, [the unit] shall operate following the orders of the air divi-

sion. The unit shall directly make arrangements with Raiding Unit Commander Wakamatsu for [the latter's] assistance in readying the airfield.

The Operation Plan of the 2d Division

The operation outline of the 2d Division that the Sixteenth Army showed to it was as follows:⁽⁹⁶⁾

Operation Outline of the 2d Division

1. Mission

- (1) The division shall land on western Java and promptly seize Batavia, while defeating the enemy.
- (2) After that, the division shall promptly seize Bandung with its main force via Purwakarta, Subang and the area east of these cities, and with one element via Cianjur and the area south [of this town].

2. Directives

- (3) The division shall have its main force land near Bojonegara and one element in the areas north and south of Merak before daybreak on Day H and promptly secure the crossing points near Rangkasbitung and Kragilan with one element. At the same time it shall have one powerful element rush to Buitenzorg [Bogor], divide the enemy in the Batavia and the Bandung areas, cut off their escape routes and block reinforcements, after which it shall gain a footing as forward as possible for the subsequent operation of the army to seize Bandung.
- (4) The main force of the division shall promptly advance to Serang and vicinity first without waiting for the completion of the landing [operation]. Then, it shall rush toward Batavia and the area south of [the city] through the areas along the Serang – Tangerang – Batavia road and promptly seize the city.
The Shōji Detachment shall promptly advance to the crossing point over the Citarum River and vicinity (Krawang) and divide the enemy in the Bandung and the Batavia areas, while making preparations for the subsequent [operation to] seize Batavia.
- (5) When Batavia is seized, the division shall promptly seize Bandung with its main force from the direction of Purwakarta and Subang and with one element from the direction of Cianjur. Depending on the circumstances, the element advancing from the direction of Cianjur may seize Bandung in concert with the Shōji Detachment before the arrival of the main force of the division.
- (6) The division shall subsequently mop up the enemy all over Java in concert with the 48th Division.

The 2d Division had to leave the 3d Battalion of the 2d Field Artillery Regiment in the homeland due to the [limited] availability of ships caused by the moving up of the Java operation and have the battalion catch up later.^(31, 53) [The division] was [also specifically] instructed to put the 1st Battalion of the 16th Infantry Regiment at the disposal of the [Sixteenth] Army as its reserve.⁽⁵³⁾

On 27 January, the division, along with the [Sixteenth] Army headquarters and the Shōji Detachment, made arrangements with the 5th Destroyer Squadron in Gaoxiong [pp. 241-244]. [The division] received the already-described order of the Sixteenth Army [p. 245], and the previously-mentioned operation outline on the 30th, and passed down its [own] divisional order concerning the landing [operation] the next day, the 31st.^(31, 120, 59)

In this divisional order, the disposition of the forces was shown in outline in the following way, based on the plan that [the division] should make a surprise landing on the western coast of Bantam Bay (Sector C) with its main force, and with one element on Merak Island and the coast north of Merak (not included) (Sector B), and on the coast south of Merak (Sector A) before daybreak on Day H, and advance without waiting for the completion of the landing [operation], and that it should carry out a forced landing if day broke after the beginning of the landing [operation], or if the enemy had sensed its plans.

Merak area

Nasu Detachment (with the following core units)⁽⁹⁶⁾

Commander: Maj. Gen. Nasu Yumio, commander of the 2d Infantry Group

2d Infantry Group headquarters

16th Infantry Regiment (minus the 1st Battalion)

2d Reconnaissance Regiment

1st Battalion of the 2d Field Artillery Regiment (minus the 1st Battery)

1st Company of the 2d Engineer Regiment

One tank squadron

One antitank gun company

Motorbike unit

One antiaircraft artillery battery

Accompanied by Staff Officer Satō Hidehiko

On completion of the preparations for the landing, [the detachment] shall promptly land in Sector A and have one element rush to Rangkasbitung and Kragilan to secure the crossing points over the Ciujung River. At the same time, it shall have its main force first promptly advance to the right bank area of the Ciujung River near Rangkasbitung, [by pushing] along the Cilegon – Serang – Buitenzorg road, and then rush to Buitenzorg and vicinity, get control of narrow paths in the neighborhood, and cut off the Bandung – Batavia road.^(31, 64, 65)

Fukushima Detachment

Commander: Col. Fukushima Kyūsaku, commander of the 4th Infantry Regiment

4th Infantry Regiment (minus the 3d Battalion)

5th Independent Antitank Gun Battalion

2d Battalion of the 2d Field Artillery Regiment

2d Battery of the 16th Antiaircraft Artillery Regiment

2d Company of the 2d Engineer Regiment

One-third of the medical unit

Water Supply and Purification Department⁽⁹⁶⁾

[The detachment] shall land in Sector B, and first advance into Serang and vicinity along the Sekong – Cilegon – Serang road, following the Nasu Detachment. [Then,] it shall prepare for the advance toward the area southwest of Batavia (inference by the author).

Bantam Bay area

Unit to seize Panjang Island

The Kawamura Platoon of the 9th Company of the 4th Infantry Regiment (including one machine gun squad with a radio unit)⁽⁵⁹⁾

The unit shall make a surprise landing on Panjang Island, seize it, and facilitate the landing of the main force of the [Sixteenth] Army at Bantam Bay.⁽⁵⁹⁾

Satō Detachment (with the following core units)⁽⁹⁶⁾

Commander: Col. Satō Hanshichi, commander of the 29th Infantry Regiment

29th Infantry Regiment

- 2d Tank Regiment (minus three squadrons)
- One antitank gun company
- 2d Engineer Regiment (minus the 1st and the 2d Company)
- The detachment shall land in Sector C, and first advance to the left bank area of the Ci-jung River, along the Trate – Bantam – Kragilan – Tangerang road. [Then,] it shall prepare for the advance toward the area west of Batavia (inference by the author).
- Artillery Unit
 - Commander: Col. Ishizaki Masuo, commander of the 2d Field Artillery Regiment
 - 2d Field Artillery Regiment (minus two and a half battalions)
 - One field heavy artillery battalion (minus one battery)⁽⁹⁶⁾
- Engineer Unit
 - Commander: Col. Oda Yoshishige, commander of the 1st Independent Engineer Regiment
 - Main force of the 1st Independent Engineer Regiment
 - 4th Independent Engineer Company
 - One independent motor transport platoon
 - Two river-crossing material companies (minus one element)⁽⁹⁶⁾
- Air Defense Unit
 - Main force of the 16th Antiaircraft Artillery Regiment⁽⁹⁶⁾
- Reserve Corps
 - 3d Battalion of the 4th Infantry Regiment (minus one platoon)⁽⁹⁶⁾
- Note: The 1st Battalion of the 16th Infantry Regiment was the reserve unit of the [Sixteenth] Army.

The Operation Plan of the Third Air Force

In the previously-mentioned “Arrangements for Operation H between the Sixteenth Army, the Third Air Force, the Third Fleet and the Eleventh Air Fleet” (preliminarily agreed on 23 January and revised on 10 February) [pp. 226–233], and the “Outline for the Air Operations [in Operation] H of the Third Air Force” (14 February), the support for the ground operations in Java was planned as follows:⁽⁹⁶⁾

1. The support for the ground operations was arranged as follows:
 - The area of the main force of the Sixteenth Army
 - (1) The Army shall be in charge of the direct support of the ground operations.
 - (2) The Navy shall be in charge of cutting off the transport [routes] of the enemy in the Cilacap area. It shall [also] be in charge of attacking enemy reinforcements or forces in retreat when requested by the Army.
 - The area of the 48th Division
 - The Third Fleet shall be in charge of the direct support of the ground operations, and the Eleventh Air Fleet shall appropriately provide support at the request of the Army. The Army shall join in [the direct support] if possible.
2. It was arranged that the Army should allocate about fifteen command reconnaissance planes, about four army reconnaissance planes, about ninety fighter planes, about twenty assault planes, about twenty light bombers and about thirty heavy bombers. Based on this [arrangement], the Third Air Force commander organized the Operation H Unit with the following units, and deployed the air division of fighter planes (the 12th Air Division) in Tanjungkarang and the other units and the headquarters of the Air Force in Palembang (he had advanced into Palembang on 21 February).⁽⁹⁶⁾
 - Unit under the direct control: the 81st Air Group (command reconnaissance aircraft)

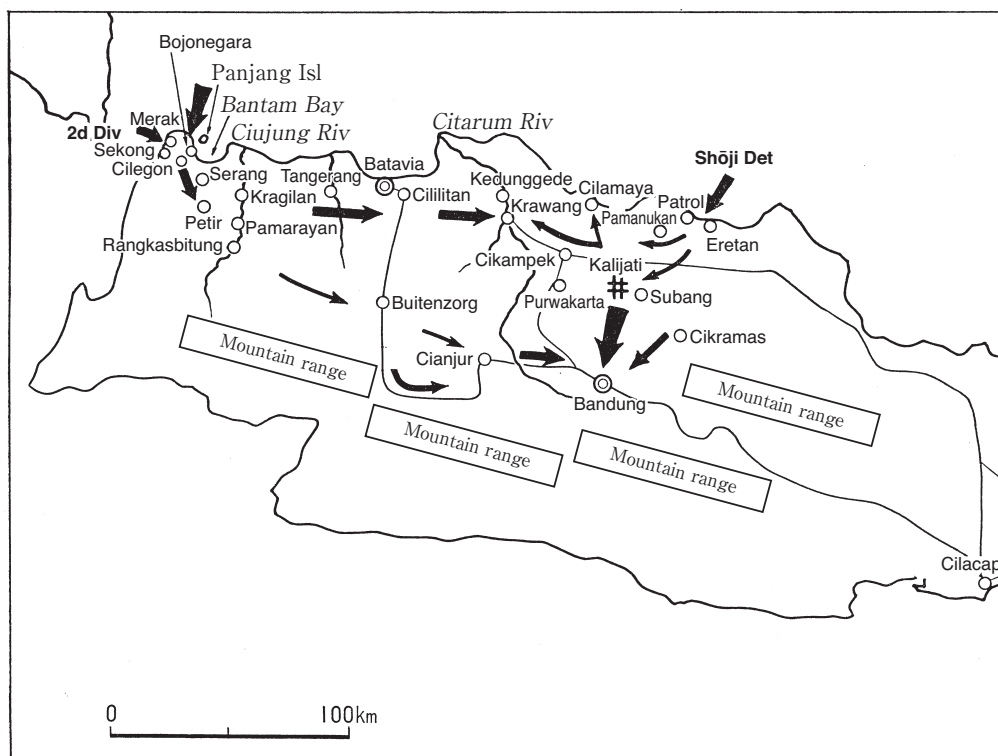


Illustration No. 47 — Overview of the Operation Plan of the Sixteenth Army

12th Air Division

One squadron of the 1st Air Group (fighter planes)

11th Air Group (fighter planes)

3d Air Division

15th Independent Air Unit (its headquarters, and the 50th and the 52d Independent Squadron) (command reconnaissance aircraft).

59th Air Group (fighter planes)

64th Air Group (fighter planes)

27th Air Group (minus one squadron) (assault planes)

75th Air Group (light bombers)

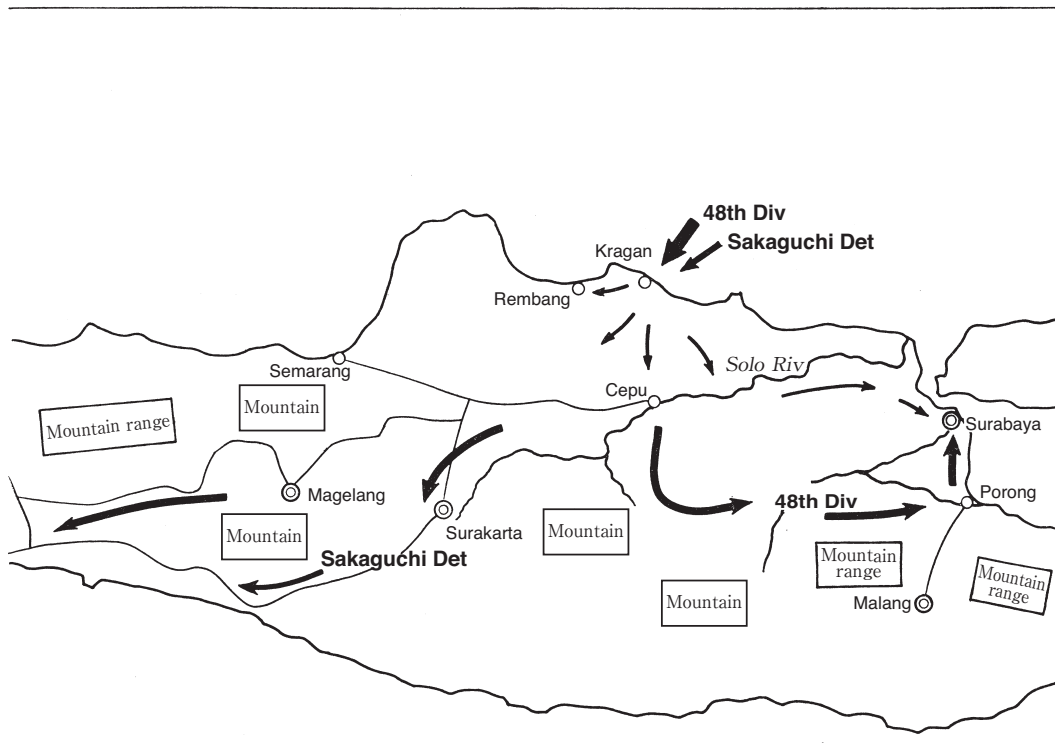
90th Air Group (light bombers)

The convoy cover assigned to the Third Air Force was [limited to] the cover for the main force of the [Sixteenth] Army (excluding the Shōji Detachment) after the latter had separated from the main force of the Sixteenth Army.⁽⁹⁶⁾

Concerning the guarding of the anchorage assigned to the Army, it was arranged that a continuous guarding in the sky over the anchorage should be provided until sunset each day in the Bantam and the Merak areas respectively until Day H + 2 and Day H + 1, and after that, air cover should be provided as needed depending on the circumstances.⁽⁹⁶⁾

3. The use of airfields in Java was arranged roughly in the following way:⁽⁹⁶⁾

- (1) The Batavia and the Cililitan airfields should be readied by the Army and shared by the Army and the Navy (with about thirty-five and about sixty-three aircraft respectively).



(2) The Buitenzorg [Bogor] and the Kalijati airfields would be used by the Army. The Navy might advance about twenty-seven aircraft to the Kalijati airfield.

4. The Sixteenth Army was to have the ground units of the air unit which had been brought under its control by the Southern Army Order of 15 January [p. 156] advance to a position very close to the front line units of the 2d Division and the Shōji Detachment, and promptly make the airfields ready. [The Army] had disposed them in the following way. Furthermore, the plan was that the [Army] Third Air Force should rapidly advance [to these airfields], when their preparation would for the most part be completed.^(23, 73, 96)

(1) Units to accompany the Shōji Detachment and make the Kalijati airfield ready (expected [to enable] air units to advance there on Day H).

- 24th Airfield Battalion (minus one element)
- One element of the 28th Airfield Battalion
- One squad of the 1st Air Signal Regiment
- One meteorological observation detail of the 4th Meteorological Company
- One platoon of the 298th Independent Motor Transport Company
- One platoon of the 123d Ground Duty Company

(2) Units to accompany the 2d Division, and make the Buitenzorg and the Batavia airfield ready (expected [to enable] air units to advance into the Buitenzorg airfield on Day H + 3 and into the Batavia airfield on Day H + 4).

- 4th Air Ground Support Headquarters
- One element of the 24th Airfield Battalion
- 28th Airfield Battalion (minus one element)
- Two squads of the 1st Air Signal Regiment
- 9th Field Airfield Construction Unit
- One element of 9th Field Aircraft Repair Depot

4th Meteorological Company (minus one element)
 298th Independent Motor Transport Company (minus one platoon)
 123d Ground Duty Company (minus one platoon)

(2) The Operations in the Sector of the 2d Division; the Operational Direction by the [Sixteenth] Army

Landing; the Ship with the [Sixteenth] Army Headquarters Torpedoed

(See Illustrations No. 48, No. 49, and No. 50)

Naval Engagements; [the Ship carrying the Sixteenth Army Headquarters] Torpedoed

As we have seen, the eight transport ships carrying the unit of the 2d Infantry Group Commander Nasu and his men, which was to land to the south of Merak, the seven transport ships carrying the unit of the 4th Infantry Regiment Commander Fukushima and his men, which was to land to the north of Merak, and the thirty-two transport ships carrying the unit of [Sixteenth] Army Commander Imamura and others, which was to land at Bantam Bay, had separated from the transport convoy ([of] seven ships) of the Shōji Detachment at a point about 140 nautical miles north of Batavia at 0530 on the 27th.⁽¹²⁰⁾ From this point (Point J), the [Army] Third Air Force assumed the task of escorting the convoy (except the Shōji Detachment).⁽⁹⁶⁾ On that day, [the convoy] reversed its course at the report of the appearance of an allied fleet (one heavy cruiser, two light cruisers and two destroyers). The landing date was postponed by another day, and the convoy separately advanced toward southern and northern Merak, and Bantam [at last] at 2020 on the 28th.⁽¹²⁰⁾ (See the previous description.)

The thirty-two ships of the convoy heading for Bantam Bay reached the bay at 2230.⁽¹²⁰⁾ Despite the almost full moon, the sky was not very clear.⁽³¹⁾ Just before the convoy's entry into the anchorage, allied aircraft came reconnoitering but flew away.⁽¹²⁰⁾ Just after the convoy's entry into the anchorage, two [enemy] patrol boats were spotted. [Editor's note: According to Vol. 26, p. 436, there was only one patrol boat.] Our pilot ship [the destroyer *Harukaze*, in concert with the *Fubuki*] fired at them, drove them off, and made them run aground.⁽¹²⁰⁾ [The convoy] started dropping anchor around 2345 and completed its entry into the anchorage by 0000 on 1 March.⁽¹²⁰⁾

At 0030, the 1st landing unit departed. It was followed by a coded message that the left wing unit had successfully landed as early as at 0033, which was immediately transmitted to Saigon and Tokyo.⁽³⁴⁾ However, around 0037, the convoy came under attack from the sky as well as from the sea, and it launched an anti-aircraft barrage while the fleet engaged the enemy at sea.⁽¹²⁰⁾

The attacking allied forces consisted of six aircraft and the U.S. heavy cruiser *USS Houston* and the Australian light cruiser *HMAS Perth*.⁽¹²⁰⁾ These two cruisers drove back the (six) [Japanese] destroyers with their huge guns and approached to a point five kilometers off the anchorage at 0100.⁽¹²⁰⁾ After ordering: "All, Charge" at 0045, Rear Admiral Hara, commander of the 5th Destroyer Squadron, rushed [toward them], leading the light cruiser *Natori* and two destroyers. However, at that time (0100), he was still about fifteen kilometers away from the anchorage and these two cruisers.⁽¹²⁰⁾ Prior to that, Rear Admiral Hara had ordered: "The transport ships shall go into the bay and evade [the engagements] all together."⁽¹²⁰⁾ However, it was feared that mines were laid in the bay, and Maj. Gen. Itō Shinobu, commander of the disembarkation group, ordered the ships to shift anchor to a point closer to the coast where

all of them could be run aground.⁽⁹⁴⁾ Fortunately, a smoke screen created by a [Japanese] destroyer hid the convoy from the U.S. and Australian cruisers.⁽¹²⁰⁾ Around 0100, the *Natori* and the other ships started to engage the enemy and were joined by the heavy cruisers *Mikuma* and *Mogami* of the 7th Cruiser Division around 0118. During the engagement, the battle site shifted to the north. At 0140, *HMAS Perth* was sunk, followed by *USS Houston* at 0206.^(115, 120)

At the Bantam anchorage, one crisis followed another. Shortly after *USS Houston* and *HMAS Perth* had passed five kilometers off the anchorage, allied high-speed torpedo boats rushed in.⁽³⁴⁾ It was just when the *Mikuma*, the *Mogami* and the other ships were engaged in a gun battle and launching their torpedoes; enemy as well as Japanese torpedoes crisscrossed [the waters]. The hospital ship *Hōrai-maru*, which was shifting her anchor, was hit by a torpedo, blew up, and listed.⁽²⁷⁾ She was followed by the *Ryūjō-maru*, with [Sixteenth] Army Commander Imamura on board, which was [also] blown up by a torpedo.⁽²⁷⁾ Then, the *Sakura-maru* was torpedoed and sunk, and the *Tatsuno-maru* was also torpedoed and heavily damaged.⁽²⁷⁾ As they were [still] shifting anchors, [the loss was that] the *Sakura-maru* was sunk, and that the heavily damaged *Ryūjō-maru*, *Hōrai-maru*, and *Tatsuno-maru* ran aground and listed.⁽²⁷⁾ [Editor's note: Dutch sources make no mention at all of the presence of allied high-speed torpedo boats; it appears that the Japanese ships were all hit by friendly fire. Vol. 26, p. 490 admits as much.]

The *Ryūjō-maru* and the *Sakura-maru* were carrying the [Sixteenth] Army headquarters.^(35, 36) Maj. Gen. Itō Shinobu, the disembarkation group commander, put all the strength of the [crew of the] *Atsuta-maru*, which he was on, into the rescue operation.⁽⁹⁴⁾ These four ships were sunk or destroyed in the middle of the second landing, but the disembarkation [operation] was continued. The *Ryūjō-maru* was shot through at the fuel oil tank, which caused the fuel oil to spill out into the waters all around.⁽⁹⁴⁾ [Sixteenth] Army Commander Imamura, aged fifty-five and armed, swam around in the oil-covered waters floating in his life jacket until he was [finally] rescued around 0430. His watch had stopped at 0200.⁽³⁵⁾

Due to the shipwreck of the two ships carrying the [Sixteenth] Army headquarters (the *Ryūjō-maru* and the *Sakura-maru*), radio sets, code books, a war chest of six million yen and other equipment was lost.⁽²⁷⁾ In the shipwreck of a total of four ships, one large and five small motorized [landing] craft, one small steamboat and two boats with Yanmar engines were lost as well.⁽²⁷⁾

An irrecoverable loss was the sinking in the sea of the radio sets and the code books, which ended up causing difficulties in the command of the [Sixteenth] Army during the most important first days of the landing operations. The thirty-two ships of the convoy [of the

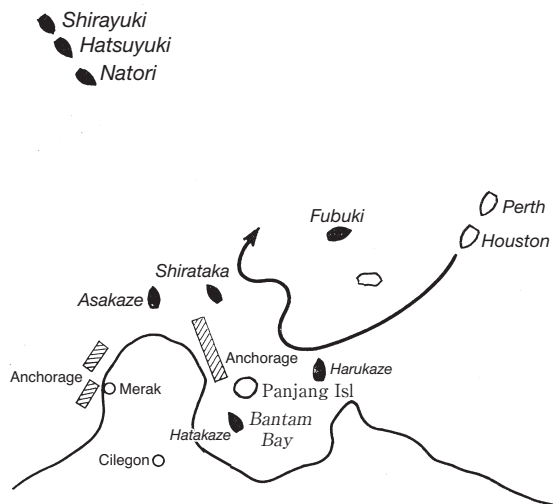
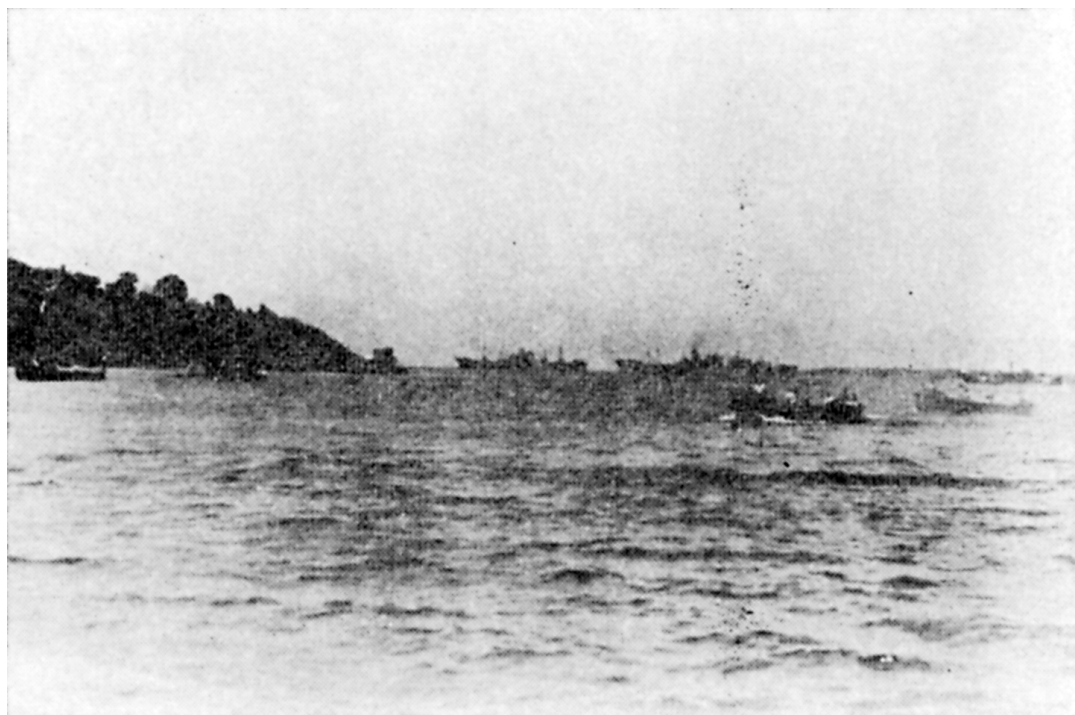


Illustration No. 48 — The Position of [the Japanese Naval] Forces Immediately After the Appearance of the Enemy Ships, and the Latter's Movements



The Landing [Operation] of the Main Force of the Sixteenth Army at Bantam Bay

units to] land in Bantam [Bay] were divided into six sections, of which the *Ryūjō-maru* belonged to the 2d Section, the *Tatsuno-maru* and the *Hōrai-maru* to the 1st Section, and the *Sakura-maru* to the 4th Section.⁽¹²⁰⁾ The *Ryūjō-maru*, which could carry airplanes in addition to thirty to forty large motorized [landing] craft and a great many small ones, had a peculiar appearance and, as we have seen, it had been an issue whether the [Sixteenth] Army commander ([and] the army headquarters) should board [this ship].

Note: The sinking of the radio sets of the *Sakura-maru* was reported as follows:⁽¹⁴⁷⁾

SHŌSEN (note by the author: the abbreviation for the Saigon command post of the Shipping Transport Command) Staff Telegram No.2459 (sent at 1800, 3 March)

From: Captain General of the Shipping Transport Command [at] Saigon

To: War Minister, and Inspector General of Logistics

[This is] to report that I received a report to the effect that among the radio sets loaded on the *Sakura-maru*, the following (including accessories), kept by the signal regiment, have been lost at the time of the sinking of the ship off the coast of Java on 1 March.

1. One 2-kilowatt shortwave radio set
2. One 500-watt medium-wave and shortwave marine radio set
3. Two Type-94 Mark-3A radio sets
4. One Type-94 radio set
5. Eleven Type-96 Mark-7 radio sets

The Operational Direction by the Sixteenth Army on the 1st [of March]

[The chief of the] Signal Communication Staff of the Sixteenth Army, Lieutenant Colonel Saiki, had been positioned in the communications room of the *Ryūjō-maru* from the moment the convoy was about to enter the Bantam anchorage. Upon receiving the report of the suc-



*Army Commander Imamura and his Staff Officers Just After Landing out of the Oil-Covered Waters
(From the left in the back row, Chief of Staff [Okazaki], Staff Officer Kitamura, and Staff Officer Okamura)*

cessful landing at 0033, he immediately transmitted the report. A little after 0130, Staff Officer Saiki left the *Ryūjō-maru* by motorized landing craft along with personnel to set up the command post of the [Sixteenth] Army.⁽³⁴⁾ The gunfire of the naval engagement with the U.S. and Australian cruisers was heard less and less. They landed on the coral coast, looked [back] at the sea, and saw high-speed [enemy] torpedo boats spotlighting the [Japanese] transport ships and firing at them.⁽³⁴⁾ They saw the *Ryūjō-maru* listing, hit by a torpedo. As they feared that the coast might come under fire, they left the landing point around 0300, worrying about the safety of the army commander and the others, reached the village of Ragas and set up the command post there.⁽³⁴⁾ Staff Officer Saiki was accompanied by only a radio platoon with a Mark-3 radio set, which enabled him to communicate with the 2d Division and the *Atsuta-maru* (disembarkation group commander Itō), but it was impossible to communicate with the Shōji Detachment, the Sakaguchi Detachment, the 48th Division and others, which were beyond the communication range of a Mark-3 radio set.⁽³⁴⁾ From around daybreak, the [Sixteenth] Army commander and others, who were soaked black with fuel oil, arrived one after another. Senior Staff of Section 1, Takashima, was hospitalized. Frustrated, Staff Officer Saiki tried hard to communicate with the Shōji Detachment and other corps in distant places, as well as the Southern Army, but without success. The first thing to do was to request the Southern Army to provide [the command post] with communication equipment and code books. He tried to send a telegram to the Southern Army by asking a naval signal unit to transmit it via the *Natori*, the flagship of the 5th Destroyer Squadron, only to fail. Then he asked [the unit] to transmit it via the Eleventh Air Fleet, but it was unknown whether it reached [the Southern Army] or not.⁽³⁴⁾ Around 1500, he was able to get hold of two fixed

wireless units at last. He tried to make contact with all units concerned other than the 2d Division by employing all the radio sets, but in the end he could not establish contact on 1 March. The amount of equipment brought ashore was very small, and it took much time to set it up, due to the fact that it was long-distance radio sets and that the [signal] unit was inexperienced [in handling these]. The radio contact with the Southern Army was [finally] established at 1000 on the next day, the 2d, and radio contact with the others followed. However, in disregard of the communications situation, a huge amount of transmissions poured in, and because there were only a small number of communication sets and code books, communications became unmanageable.

On that day (the 1st), [radio] contact with the Shōji Detachment, the Sakaguchi Detachment and the 48th Division could not be established all day.⁽³⁴⁾ However, [the command post] was informed by the Navy that those landing [operations] were going well.⁽³⁶⁾ Communications with the 2d Division were maintained.⁽³⁶⁾ Whereas the war situation seemed favorable in the Merak area (the Nasu and the Fukushima Detachment), in the area where the main force of the 2d Division [had landed], the only road through the paddy fields about one kilometer south of the [Sixteenth] Army headquarters was blasted, and it was not expected to be repaired for the time being, which forced the unit to make a detour through the jungle. On top of that, the road south of the blast point was blocked with huge cut-down or blasted-down roadside trees, presumed to be 300 years old, due to which the unit had a very hard time going southward while carrying their bicycles on their shoulders. It seemed out of the question to capture the entire island by ‘*Shunki-kōreisai*’ (the Imperial ceremony of ancestor worship on the vernal equinox day, 21 March).^(35, 36, 59)

In the evening, Staff Officer Wakatsuki (Staff Officer of the Third Fleet seconded to the Sixteenth Army) wired to the Southern Task Force and others through the naval communication system the following:⁽¹³¹⁾

The military situation on land of [Operation] H on 1 March is as follows:

1. The main force has landed at Bantam Bay and the detachment has landed at Merak; the front line has already reached Serang. The [Sixteenth] Army headquarters is positioned near the landing point and is scheduled to advance to Serang tomorrow morning. The enemy has put up a stubborn resistance and thoroughly destroyed the roads.
2. The military situation is developing smoothly in the areas of the 48th Division and the Shōji Detachment, but details are unknown.

The next day it turned out that the road barricade with roadside trees before the main force of the 2d Division continued for ten kilometers to Serdang.^(35, 36) On that evening (the 1st), however, even though the advance of the main force of the 2d Division was still hampered, the [Sixteenth] Army headquarters finally felt greatly relieved to receive a telegram that the operations in the Merak area were going well and that the advance party of the Nasu Detachment in pursuit of the enemy had broken through Serang, and rushed even further to secure one of the bridges over the Cijung River, to which all the time great importance had been attached, just before it was going to be blown up.⁽³⁶⁾

The Leadership of the Southern Army on the 1st [of March]

The Southern Army headquarters ([in] Saigon) had received the telegram from the *Ryūjō-maru* before its shipwreck that “the main force of the [Sixteenth] Army [had] completed its entry into the anchorage at 2350 on the 28th and succeeded in landing near Cape Awuran in the morning of today, the 1st.”⁽²⁴⁾ On that day, the Southern Army wired back as follows:^(23, 24)

We offer our sincere congratulations on your successful landing. We hope that you will destroy the base of the enemy at once and swiftly complete your mission.

By saying that it hoped [that the Sixteenth Army would] “destroy the base of the enemy at once,” the Southern Army expressed its view that [the Sixteenth Army] should make Bandung the primary target, contrary to the latter which had made Batavia the primary target and considered Bandung as the secondary target in its operation plan as well as in its operation orders.^(23, 24)

Learning about the accident to [Sixteenth] Army Commander Imamura and his men, the war minister and the chief of the general staff sent telegrams expressing their sympathy.⁽¹⁷⁾ However, the Southern Army sent no expressions of sympathy. It was beyond doubt that the Southern Army sympathized with the ship-wrecked [Sixteenth] Army headquarters, but it felt that it was something that could happen to soldiers, and that the success or failure of the landing held the key to the success of Operation H. Now that [the Sixteenth Army] had succeeded in landing, [the Sixteenth Army] should go straight for Bandung, putting Batavia aside, and by sending only the previously-mentioned telegram it meant to boost the morale of the Sixteenth Army.⁽²³⁾

[The Operations] of the Nasu Detachment on the 1st [of March]

The Nasu Detachment, which was assigned to land in Sector A of Merak (note: at the right front) and rush toward Buitenzorg, was organized for transportation by motor vehicle.⁽⁵⁵⁾

Detachment Commander Nasu had divided the landing (disembarkation) of his men and motor vehicles into eleven sections, and he further divided the first section into two transports. He planned to have the unit that was to seize the coastal area ([consisting only of] men) land in the first transport of the first section and to have the raiding unit ([consisting of] men and motor vehicles) land in the second transport of the first section and have it charge ahead. The remaining units were to land (disembark) after that.^(64, 65)

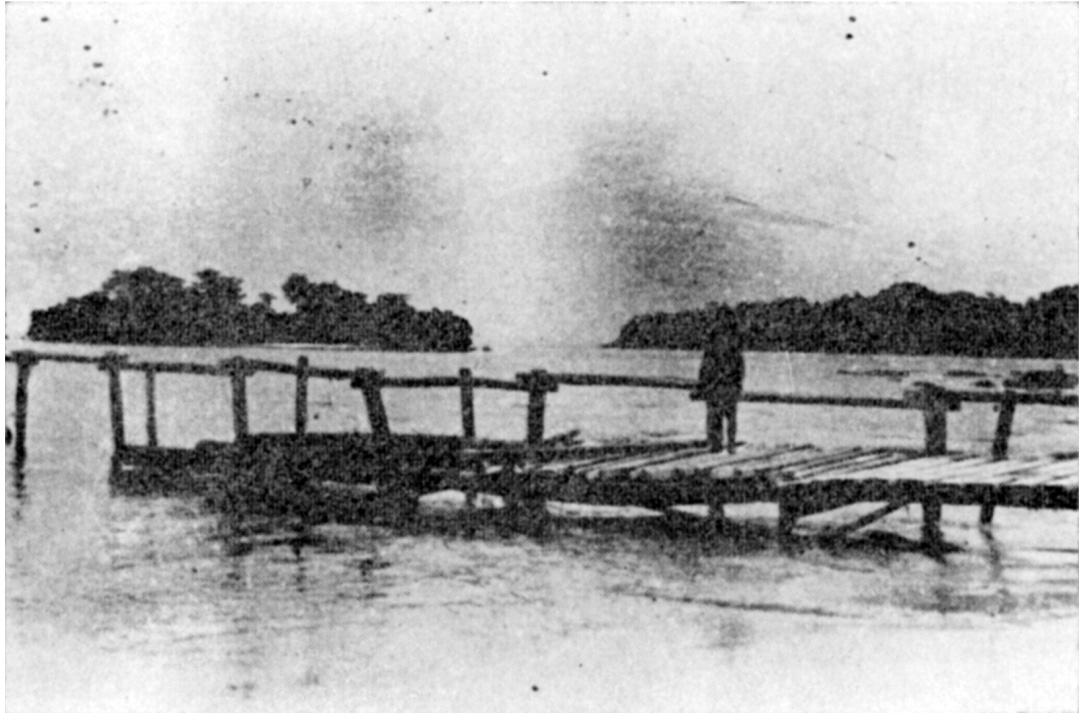
Planning “to make a surprise landing in Sector A at 0200, advance all at once into the area on the right bank of the Ciujung River near Rangkasbitung and make preparations for the subsequent advance” on the first day of landing, Detachment Commander Nasu disposed [his unit] roughly as follows:^(64, 65)

K Raiding Unit ([consisting of] the 3d Company of the 2d Reconnaissance Regiment as the core):

The unit shall land in the second transport of the first section, promptly charge toward Krag-ilan along the Cilegon – Serang road and secure the bridge over the Ciujung River. When one element of the Satō Detachment arrives [there], the unit shall turn over [the defense of] the bridge [to it] and return to the Noguchi Echelon.

Noguchi Echelon (with the following core units):

Main force of the 2d Reconnaissance Regiment



The Coast of Merak After the Landing of the Nasu Detachment

Motorbike unit

One field artillery battery (minus one section)

One divisional engineer platoon

One independent engineer platoon

One independent antitank gun company (minus one platoon)

The echelon shall start landing in the second transport of the first section following the unit of the Hiroyasu Echelon that shall land in the first transport of the section, charge toward Rangkasbitung without engaging the enemy and try to secure the bridge there while making preparations for advancing toward Buitenzorg. When one element of the Fukushima Detachment arrives, the echelon shall turn over the defense of the bridge to them.

Hiroyasu Echelon (with the following core units):

16th Infantry Regiment (minus the 1st Battalion, the 10th Company, and one regimental gun platoon)

1st Battalion of the 2d Field Artillery Regiment ([minus?] one battery and one section)

One engineer company (minus one platoon)

One bridge building material platoon

39th Independent Motor Transport Battalion (minus the 3d and the 4th Company)

While focusing its attention on its right flank, the echelon shall land on the coast between a point about one kilometer west of Mt. Kamuning and the southern end of Merak. While having one element mop up possible [enemy] firing positions on its flank near the landing coast, it shall have its main force first of all promptly charge to Cilegon along the Merak – Serang road, further rush through the area along the Serang – Tunjung Ketuk road without waiting for the disembarkation of motor vehicles and guns, cross the Ciujung River in the area north of Rangkasbitung, advance into the eastern area of the city, and make preparations for the subsequent advance.

Remaining units:

Shall follow the Hiroyasu Echelon.

The convoy of the Nasu Detachment (the *Kōyō-maru*, the *Hokumei-maru*, the *Shinshū-maru*, the *Columbia-maru*, the *Atlas-maru*, the *Ryūnan-maru* and the *Akitsu-maru*, a total of seven ships) [editor's note: the names and number of ships differ from the list in the agreement given on p. 242] entered the anchorage at 0000 on 1 March, dropped anchor at 0030, and conducted the vessel-launching (note: the launching of landing craft onto the waters from transport ships) around 0130.^(58, 64, 120)

Both front-line battalions of the Hiroyasu Echelon that were to land in the first transport of the first section (at the right front line the 2d Battalion commanded by Maj. Onoguchi Satoru and at the left front line the 3d Battalion commanded by Maj. Morozumi Yoshikazu) came ashore at 0200. Although there was about one Dutch East Indies Army company in Merak and vicinity, they retreated without putting up much resistance. After landing, the Hiroyasu Echelon immediately started advancing on foot, drove away a Dutch East Indies Army unit consisting of some 200 men in Cilegon in the early morning, commandeered a few motor vehicles in the city (one motor vehicle for the Morozumi Battalion in the rear), and continued its advance.^(61, 62)

The K Raiding Unit and the Noguchi Echelon landed following both front-line battalions of the Hiroyasu Echelon and charged ahead, overtaking [both battalions].^(64, 65)

Echelon Commander Noguchi (2d Reconnaissance Regiment Commander Lt. Col. Noguchi Kin'ichi) had divided his unit into three advance parties and the main body ([consisting of] three echelons). He had disposed his unit roughly in the following way, planning to have [the unit] land in the order of the advance parties and the main body, and while having the advance parties immediately charge toward the bridge over the Ciujung River, have the main body rush toward Rangkasbitung after lining up the echelons one after another in a column on the right side of the main road near Grogol. On arrival in Rangkasbitung, the unit should make preparations for the subsequent advance.^(64, 65)

Right advance party (the main force of the 4th Company): to the Rangkasbitung bridge.

Left advance party (two platoon of the 3d Company): to the Pamarayan bridge.

Shishido advance party (motorbike unit): shall charge to Serang, secure the Serang bridge, and rush toward Rangkasbitung when the first echelon arrives. After that, it shall make preparations for advancing toward Lawangtaji.

Main body and the order of the accompanying units:

First echelon (led by Captain Takase; [consisting of] the 2d Company, the regimental headquarters, and others): After forming a column with its head at Grogol, the echelon shall rush to Rangkasbitung. After that, it shall make preparations for advancing toward Leuwiliang. It shall have one element take over the defense of the Rangkasbitung bridge from the right advance party and turn it over to the Fukushima Detachment when the latter arrives.

Second echelon (led by Captain Sakurai; [consisting of] the main force of the 1st Company, the main force of the independent antitank gun company, and others): shall follow the first echelon.

Third echelon (led by 1st Lt. Watanabe Kōichi; [consisting of] the 3d Battery of the 2d Field Artillery Regiment (minus one section) as the core): shall follow the 2d Echelon.

The K Raiding Unit as well as the right, the left and the Shishido advance parties overtook the Hiroyasu Echelon, charged into Serang at 0700, and further rushed to reach the line of the Cijung River by 1400.^(64, 65)

The Kragilan bridge had already been destroyed.⁽⁵⁵⁾

The advance party to seize Rangkasbitung was accompanied by 2d Division Staff Officer Maj. Satō Hidehiko. When the advance party reached Pandeglang, it encountered about one company of the British/ Australian Army, which had retreated from the Labuhan coast, caught some of the enemy and heavily pursued the enemy by having the prisoners of war drive the commandeered motor vehicles. Just when the party was approaching the front of the Rangkasbitung bridge at 1230, the allied unit managed by a hair's breadth to demolish the bridge but, fortunately, half of the bridge remained.⁽⁵⁴⁾

The unit sent to the Pamarayan bridge engaged on the east side of the bridge the allied unit that had rushed to the bridge to destroy it and narrowly managed to secure it.⁽³¹⁾

On advancing into Rangkasbitung, Echelon Commander Noguchi issued an order there at 1500 to deploy his unit so as to have one element [consisting of] the 2d Company as the core head for Leuwiliang as an advance party by leaving the town at 1630, and have the main force leave at 1730.^(64, 65)

The Hiroyasu Echelon arrived in Serang one after another from a little before noon onwards.⁽⁶⁴⁾

Detachment Commander Nasu reached Serang at 1300. By evening, he learned that the advance of the main force of the division had been delayed, that the Satō Detachment was [at last] advancing into Serdang, and that the Fukushima Detachment was advancing into the area about one kilometer northwest of Serdang. He decided to assemble his detachment in Rangkasbitung and vicinity the night of the same day, the 1st, to make preparations for advancing on the next day, the 2d, and issued his orders for the detachment in Serang at 1810. That is, the commander deployed his unit so as to position the Noguchi Echelon (with the K Raiding Unit returned) in Jasinga and the Hiroyasu Echelon in the area east of Rangkasbitung that night to prepare for the subsequent engagements, and have the remaining units advance toward Rangkasbitung one by one.⁽⁶⁴⁾

Despite the independent motor transport battalion (two companies) being assigned to the detachment and the presence of the 1st Battalion of the 2d Field Artillery Regiment, which was the only battalion in the regiment equipped with motor vehicles, the mobility of the Nasu Detachment was not sufficient. The disembarkation was scheduled to take [as long as] seven days. The Hiroyasu Echelon came under attack from one allied aircraft in Serang, but sustained no damage. [The Echelon] got hold of bicycles, which arrived while it was standing by there, and left Serang for Rangkasbitung at 1900, using commandeered motor vehicles as well. Of the Morozumi Battalion (i.e. the 3d Battalion), which departed from Serang, the battalion headquarters and the 9th Company advanced by bicycle, the machine gun company marched on foot while pulling two-wheeled carts. Motor vehicles were available only for the guns, gunners and superiors of the battalion gun platoon; all the other companies marched on foot. On that day, with a temperature of 31 degrees Celsius and no wind, the summer heat was hard on the officers and men of this regiment from Shibata in Niigata, a cold region. [The heat] was followed by torrential rain in the evening.^(61, 62, 64)

The Nasu Detachment headquarters arrived in Serang in the afternoon, and left there for Rangkasbitung at 2100.^(59, 64)

The indigenous people greeted the [Japanese] units with cheers and helped them everywhere.⁽⁵⁵⁾

[The Operations of] the Fukushima Detachment on the 1st [of March]

The convoy ([consisting of] the *Akitsu-maru*, the *Momoyama-maru*, the *Pacific-maru*, the *Kizan-maru*, the *Reiyō-maru*, the *Tsuyama-maru* and the *Sydney-maru*) of the Fukushima Detachment (led by Col. Fukushima Kyūsaku, commander of the 4th Infantry Regiment), which was to land in Sector B of Merak (the left front), completed its entry into the anchorage at 0045 on 1 March.⁽¹²⁰⁾ [Editor's note: The list of ships agrees with that on p. 242. However, the *Akitsu-maru* was on p. 477 also assigned to the Nasu Detachment. The actual situation is unclear.]

At 0145, the ships launched the landing [operation] all at once and [the troops] successfully landed without loss. Detachment Commander [Fukushima] went ashore along with the second [transport] group, and advanced to the southern end of Lebak Gede. Lt. Col. Ikuta Tōichi, commander of the 1st Battalion on the right front line, immediately sent the 2d Company to attack the Dutch East Indies Army on Mt. Merak, while having one element of the company charge toward the station and vicinity. At the same time, he also had the engineer platoon assigned [to his unit] rush along the coastal road to search for and attack enemy pill-boxes. The [Japanese] units destroyed several lines of obstacles and in combination with the outflanking attack via the top of the Mt. Merak they put the Dutch East Indies Army to flight into the jungle to the southeast, giving it no time to put up resistance. Furthermore, the unit to seize Merak Island, led by 1st Lt. Inoue Kanji, commander of the 1st Company, [managed to] land on the island under fierce [direct] fire of machine gun(s) from the direction of the Merak [railway] station and completed clearing the island. In their shift to Pulau Merak [not the island, but the suburb south of Merak across from the island], they took thirty-five white sailors prisoner, castaways from the warship(s) [*USS Houston* and/or *HMAS Perth*] sunk in the naval engagement in the Bay off Batavia [i.e. Bantam].⁽⁵⁸⁾

The [Fukushima] Detachment did not wait for the completion of the landing of the entire unit; the 1st and the 2d echelon left Sekong and Lebak Gede at 0530 and at 0730 respectively, and advanced along the Sekong – Cilegon – Serang – Petir road toward the right bank of the Cijung River near Pamarayan. The detachment commander passed through Serang around 2300. The 3d echelon and succeeding units also followed one after another after their landing.⁽⁵⁸⁾

[The Operations in] the Sector of the Main Force of the 2d Division on the 1st [of March]

The Satō Detachment (commander, 29th Infantry Regiment Commander Col. Satō Hanshichi) launched the [landing] craft of the first transport at 0000 on 1 March and landed at 0045. All fronts met with no resistance at all. The detachment commander landed at a point one kilometer west of Cape Kapo [?] at 0245. The 1st Battalion (commander, Lt. Col. Endō Shigesuke), the 2d Battalion (commander, Lt. Col. Watanabe Katsutoshi) and the 3d Battalion (raiding unit; commander, Maj. Yoshii Tadao) departed respectively at 0320, 0600 and 0630 without waiting for [the completion of] the assembly [of each unit]. They pushed along the coastal road, which was only passable with extreme difficulty due to felled roadside trees and destroyed bridges, but the heads of each battalion reached Trate respectively at 0900, 1200 and 1500. Detachment Commander [Satō] reached Trate at 1030. Then, the detachment left the

town at 1700, heading along the Trate – Bantam – Ciruas – Kragilan road toward the right bank of the Cijung River; they reached Bantam at 2100, where they encamped.^(63, 120)

The [2d] Division command post, which had been positioned in Bojonegara [following] the advance of the Satō Detachment after the landing, left the town at 1500 to move to Serdang.⁽⁵⁹⁾

Taking the situation of the detachments into account, the [2d] division commander instructed each of the detachments to send one element ahead to seize the crossing points on the Cidurian River, while urging them to [quickly] advance to the right bank of the Cijung River. At the same time, he tried to stay in [overall] control of his units.⁽³¹⁾

The divisional reserve unit ([consisting of] the 3d Battalion of the 4th Infantry Regiment led by Maj. Sasaki Mori'e) completed landing at 0520. While having one platoon clear the road along the north coast of the peninsula up to Merak, he headed southward with the main force (one company by bicycle and the others on foot) and reached Bojonegara at 1530 and Serdang at 2200.⁽⁵⁹⁾

The situation on 2 March

The [Sixteenth] Army headquarters greeted the morning of the 2d in Ragas. Radio contact with the Shōji Detachment, the 48th Division and others was yet to be established.^(34, 36)

While the [Navy] 1st Air Unit ([consisting of] the auxiliary seaplane tenders *Kamikawamaru* and *San'yō-maru*), which supported the 3d Escort Unit (under the command of the 5th Destroyer Squadron commander), was still positioned in the Anambas Islands, two planes of each ship had advanced to the Patrol base at noon of the previous day (the 1st), and two of them shifted from the Patrol base to the Bantam base that evening. The 1st Base Force had set up the Bantam Base with one element.^(130, 131) [Editor's note: This is a somewhat garbled account of the events. See Vol. 26, pp. 516–517.]

The bombings of its anchorage by allied aircraft on the previous night, along with the appearance of [allied] submarines, had caused tension in the [Sixteenth] Army headquarters. Just then, two telegrams arrived that morning (of the 2d) via the previously mentioned naval unit.⁽³⁶⁾

One was from the Shōji Detachment, which contained the message that “the Shōji Detachment seized the Kalijati airfield at noon on the 1st and obtained an immense amount of spoils. One element of the detachment is [now] advancing toward the Krawang bridge. This morning (of the 2d), the disembarkation point at Eretan is under the attack of 400 to 500 enemy [troops] with armored cars.”^(17, 36)

The other telegram was from the 48th Division, which contained the message that “according to the statement of the captain of a British destroyer, who was taken prisoner as a consequence of the naval engagement off Surabaya, two divisions of the Australian Army had completed their landing on Java at Cilacap several days ago.”^(17, 36)

The [Sixteenth] Army headquarters grew agitated. The Shōji Detachment, consisting of only two battalions, had gone inland, split up into units for Kalijati and Krawang, while its disembarkation point, which was in the middle of the disembarkation operation, was said to be under the attack of allied forces that morning. The situation of the detachments in the inland was unknown. On top of that, two divisions of the Australian Army were said to have landed recently. If it had been Dutch East Indies Army divisions, it would have been no problem, but the Australian Army could not be treated lightly. The entire staff of the headquarters

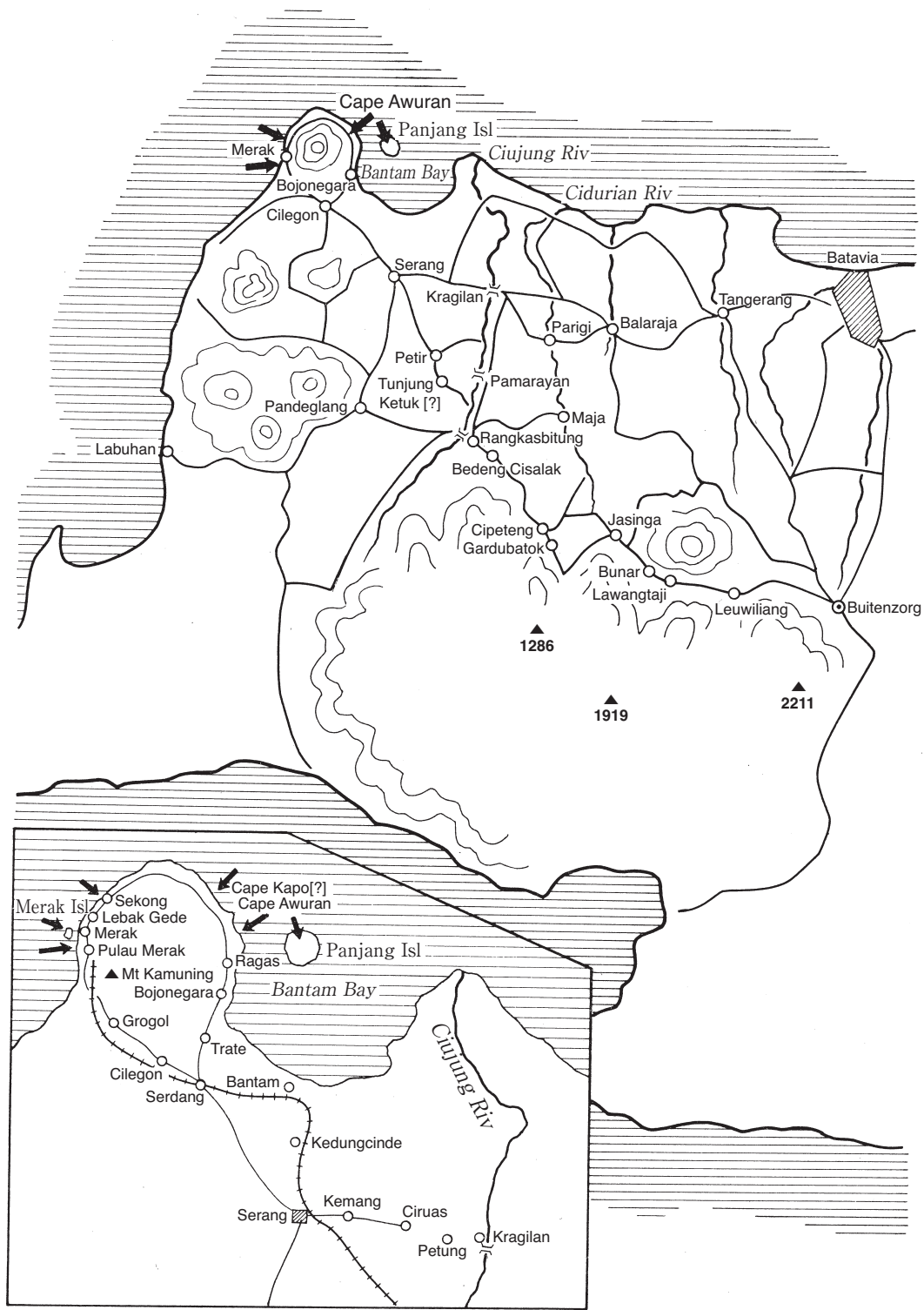


Illustration No. 49 — The Sector of the Main Force of the [Sixteenth] Army: The Terrain and Landing Points

became more and more anxious, but the chief of staff, Major General Okazaki, asserted: "The information of the landing of the Australian Army is a lie," and assured the staff that "judging from the recent operations of our aircraft, submarines and other units, as well as from the strategic positions of the enemy and ours, it is absolutely unthinkable."^(17, 36)

Note: The matter of the two divisions of the Australian Army will be described later in section 6: "The Conclusion of the Java Invasion Operation and the Operations of the Allied Forces."

It was inconvenient to give commands and establish contact from Ragas. The Army Commander [Imamura] left Ragas with the personnel of the command post at 1500. After going southward halfway along the coastal road [obstructed] with felled roadside trees, they used [landing] craft to land [again] at the southwestern part of Bantam Bay and arrived in Serang at 2000 on the 2d in the motor vehicles that had come from Merak to pick them up.^(31, 32, 35)

In the area of the Nasu Detachment, Echelon Commander Noguchi, who had left Rangkasbitung for Leuwiliang at 1730 on the 1st, reached Cipeteng (about twenty kilometers southeast of Rangkasbitung) at 1845 and learned that the advance party was in the middle of an engagement with an Australian Army [unit] equipped with machine guns there. He immediately deployed his unit, and drove off [the enemy]. As the allied forces had set anti-tank obstacles on a concave road in Cipeteng, he decided to pursue the enemy toward Gardubatok (departure scheduled at 2030) after removing the obstacles and made the necessary [changes in the] disposition of his units at 1930. The echelon resumed its advance at 2030 and continued its march while removing obstacles on the road. On the 2d at 1800, it arrived at the position of the advance company in Lawangtaji and encamped in the area between Lawangtaji and Bunar on the night of the 2d, while removing antitank obstacles and landmines near the Lawangtaji bridge.^(64, 65)

The Hiroyasu Echelon (led by 16th Infantry Regimental Commander Col. Hiroyasu Jurō) of the Nasu Detachment advanced by marching through the night from Serang and reached Bedeng Cisalak (its destination), located four kilometers east of Rangkasbitung, around 0800 on the 2d. Echelon Commander Hiroyasu decided to assemble his force near Bedeng Cisalak to [have his unit] prepare for the subsequent advance. At 0830, he arranged that the units following behind and the goods left in Serang be brought to the present location by shuttle transport [provided] by the motor transport unit. Then at 1820, having decided to advance [his units] toward Leuwiliang via Jasinga by leaving Bedeng Cisalak the next day, the 3d, he issued the relevant orders.^(61, 64, 65)

As we have seen, the Fukushima Detachment had passed through Serang the night before, and continued its rush toward Pamarayan on the 2d. From the afternoon of the 2d onwards, motor vehicles became available for the transport [of the detachment] as well, which enabled the detachment to assemble most of the separated units near the Pamarayan bridge at midnight.⁽⁵⁸⁾

The Satō Detachment left the southern end of Bantam at 0100 on the 2d to advance toward Kragilan. It reached Kedungcinde at 0730, Kemang at 1230, and Ciruas at 1900; the 1st Battalion and the main force of the detachment encamped respectively in Petung and Ciruas. On this day, the 2d, the raiding unit (i.e. the 3d Battalion led by Maj. Yoshii Tadao) rushed toward Kragilan, getting ahead of the main force at 0200, reached the town at 1040, and took

over the defense [of the town] from the K Raiding Unit of the Nasu Detachment, which had seized the town.^(31, 63)

The 2d Division command post had left Serdang around 0400 on the 2d, reached Serang, from which it departed [again] at 2000, and advanced to Petir.⁽⁵⁹⁾

The divisional reserve unit had [also] left Serdang at 0400 on the 2d and reached Serang at 1030, where it encamped.⁽⁵⁹⁾

The reserve unit of the [Sixteenth] Army ([consisting of] the 1st Battalion of the 16th Infantry Regiment, commanded by Lt. Col. Minamoto Shirō) was positioned in the area northwest of Serang.

Shifting Priority to the Buitenzorg Road

(See Illustrations No. 51, No. 52 and No. 53)

The Operational Direction of the Sixteenth Army on the 3d [of March]

The [Sixteenth] Army command post greeted the morning of the 3d in Serang.⁽³⁴⁾ Senior Staff Officer Colonel Takashima of the 1st Section was [still] in hospital and the [Sixteenth] Army headquarters was still positioned in Ragas.⁽³⁴⁾ So were [Chief] Signal Communication Staff Lieutenant Colonel Saiki and the army signal unit. The situation was [tough:] the bridge to the north of Bojonegara had not yet been repaired, and one element of the 2d Division reserve unit was still at the landing point.⁽⁵⁹⁾

The situation of the 2d Division before daybreak on the 3d was that the Nasu Detachment was advancing smoothly in general, that both the Fukushima and the Satō Detachment had managed to reach the west bank of the Cijung River at last and were preparing to cross the river, while sending one element of their force ahead to try to seize the bridges over the Cidurian River.^(58, 61, 63)

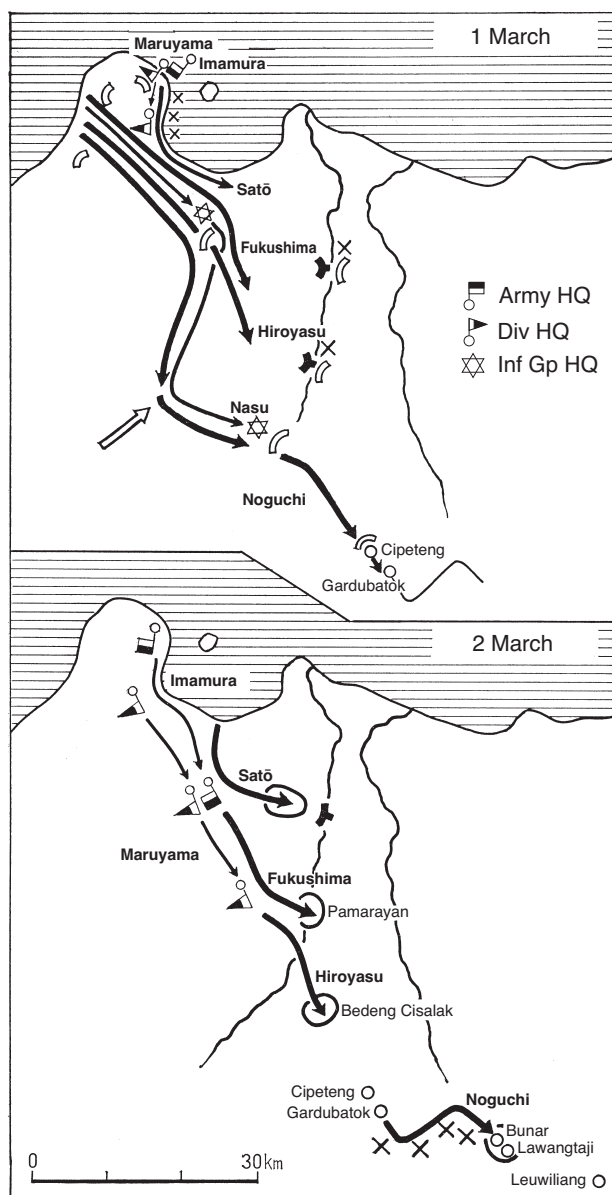


Illustration No. 50 — [Advances on] 1 and 2 March

The situation of the Shōji Detachment was a matter of concern. Because destroyed bridges, blocked roads and heavy rainfall had seriously delayed the advance of the main force of the 2d Division, the Shōji Detachment would remain isolated for an even longer period. [Sixteenth Army Chief of Staff Okazaki] had suppressed the agitation among the staff officers, asserting that the statement of the captain of an allied destroyer that two divisions of the Australian Army had landed was a lie, but he had no solid grounds. As a matter of fact, the units that put up resistance against the Nasu Detachment one after another were units of the Australian Army.

In the morning, Chief of Staff Okazaki left the [Sixteenth Army] command post in Serang to visit the 2d Division headquarters in Petir. The 2d Division Commander Maruyama told him that the division had not been able to advance as it had expected due to destroyed bridges, that the engineers had difficulty in bridging the rivers because the rivers were deep and had high banks; moreover, every day heavy squalls in the afternoon instantly swelled the rivers. Chief of Staff Okazaki went on toward the Kragilan bridge by car.⁽³⁶⁾

At noon, 2d Division Commander Maruyama decided to advance the [divisional] headquarters to Rangkasbitung to urge his units onward. He [also] decided to have the divisional reserve unit secure the Pamarayan bridge (which had not been destroyed) after the Fukushima Detachment had passed through the bridge eastward, [and] issued the following order:⁽⁵⁹⁾ [Editor's note: The Pamarayan "bridge" also functioned as a flood-control dam. The Japanese had caught the Dutch East Indies Army unit while it was setting the demolition charges.]

2d Division Order

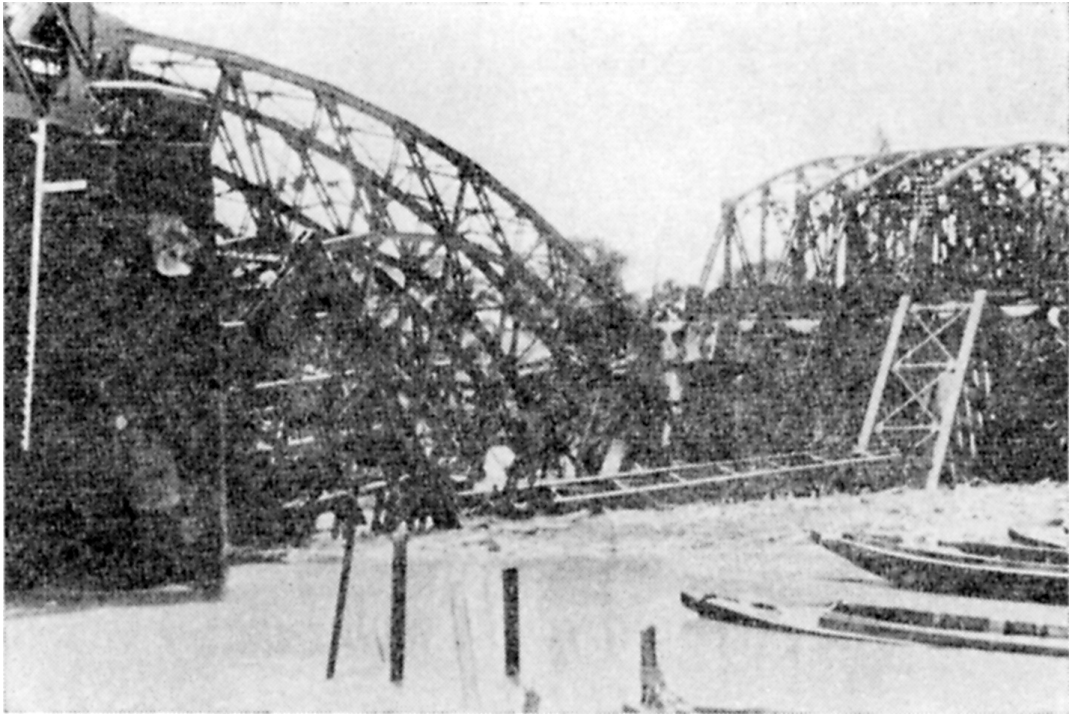
Petir, 1200, 3 March

1. This afternoon, the main force of the Fukushima Detachment shall leave Pamarayan and [start] its advance.
2. The divisional reserve unit shall have its main force advance to Pamarayan within today and keep guard mainly against the direction of Parigi. It shall have one element accompany the divisional command post as before.
3. I am at the present location and shall advance to Rangkasbitung via Pamarayan tomorrow, the 4th.

2d Division Commander Maruyama Masao

[Sixteenth] Army Chief of Staff Major General Okazaki had left the 2d Division headquarters in Petir before this divisional order was passed down and was inspecting Kragilan. The situation of the swollen river, the destroyed bridge, the preparations for bridging, the present attempts to use various materials to cross the river, etc., was entirely deplorable. Seeing that the slow performance of the unit in this area did not fit what the situation required, Chief of Staff Okazaki encouraged the Satō Detachment. Then, he hurried back to the [Sixteenth] Army command post in Serang, reported [the situation] to Army Commander Imamura and offered his opinion.⁽³⁶⁾

[As a result,] a [Sixteenth] Army order was issued to the effect that "the [Sixteenth] Army Ordnance Department Director Maj. Gen. Yamada Hisamatsu shall immediately bridge the river in Kragilan by taking unified command of the engineer units and other units assigned [to the task]."⁽³⁶⁾



The Destroyed Bridge at Kragilan

[Another Sixteenth] Army order was passed down to the 2d Division to the effect that “it shall speed up as much as possible the operations in the sectors of the Nasu and the Fukushima Detachment.”⁽³⁶⁾ One motor transport company was added to the 2d Division.⁽³⁴⁾

At 1200 on the 3d, Lieutenant Colonel Saiki, [chief] signal communication staff of the [Sixteenth] Army, left Ragas along with the main force of the army signal unit. As the bridge three kilometers north of Bojonegara had not yet been repaired, they made a detour along the north coast of the peninsula and arrived at the [Sixteenth] Army command post in Serang via Merak at 1500. The strength brought there was one wire company and two wireless platoons.⁽³⁴⁾ [However,] also on that day, telegrams from the Shōji Detachment, the 48th Division, etc. could not yet be submitted [to the army headquarters] through the [Sixteenth] Army signal unit.⁽³⁶⁾

The situation of the 2d Division on the 3d [of March]

On the early morning of the 3d, the Noguchi Echelon of the Nasu Detachment ([consisting of] the 2d Reconnaissance Regiment as the core, led by regimental commander Lt. Col. Noguchi Kin'ichi) left the area of Lawangtaji and Bunar where it was encamped the night before. The advance company advanced into Leuwiliang at 1330 and went into battle with the units of the Australian Army positioned on the east bank of the city. Echelon Commander Noguchi caught up with [the company] at 1400 and decided to make a night raid that night.^(64, 65)

The Hiroyasu Echelon of the Nasu Detachment was encamped near Bedeng Cisalak the night before. At 0840 on the 3d, the echelon left Bedeng Cisalak, transported in motor vehicles in the order of the 1st echelon ([consisting of] the Morozumi 3d Battalion as the core), the 2d echelon (the regimental headquarters and artillery units) and the 3d echelon ([consisting of]

the Onoguchi 2d Battalion as the core). Both battalions had the support of one company of the 39th Independent Motor Transport Battalion each. It was decided that upon arrival of its advance company at Leuwiliang around 1630, the echelon should join in the battle there.^(61, 62, 64)

The Fukushima Detachment, which had assembled near Pamarayan in the middle of the previous night, came under attack from allied planes three times before and after daybreak on the 3d, but it sustained no losses. It left Pamarayan at 1200 and advanced toward Maja via Rangkasbitung by motor vehicle and bicycle. Its advance party, under the command of 5th Company Commander 1st Lt. Onodera Yoshimi, rushed toward the bridge east of Maja early in the morning and reached Maja at 1600, where it reconnoitered the enemy's movements as well as the terrain. The allied units had already retreated after destroying the bridge over the Cidurian River. In addition, anything like a road was hardly seen on the right bank of the river.⁽⁵⁸⁾

The raiding unit of the Satō Detachment (the 3d Battalion under the command of the Battalion Commander Maj. Yoshii Tadao) left Kragilan in the early morning of the 3d, seized the Parigi bridge at 0930, and then advanced into Balaraja at 1530, but the bridge there had already been destroyed. The main force of the Satō Detachment advanced, crossing the Ciujung River at 1100.⁽⁶³⁾

The divisional reserve unit left Serang at 1800 on that day and arrived in Petir at 2200. Further, one company of the unit reached Pamarayan at 2300 and took over the defense of the bridge there from the Fukushima Detachment.⁽⁵⁹⁾

The 2d Division commander was still in Petir. On learning that there were no eastward roads from Maja, the division commander gave an order to the Fukushima Detachment to shift its position to the rear of the Nasu Detachment. The [Fukushima] Detachment made preparations for the shift all through the night.^(55, 58)

The Worries of the [Sixteenth] Army Headquarters

(See Illustrations No. 51, No. 52 and No. 53)

The [Sixteenth] Army headquarters greeted the morning of day four after the landing (4 March) in Serang.⁽³⁶⁾

In the sector of the Nasu Detachment, the advance company of the reconnaissance regiment had reached Leuwiliang in the early afternoon of the previous day where its light-armored car was pierced by enemy fire; the main force of the reconnaissance regiment had caught up, but the enemy was an Australian Army [unit], which had several guns and was entrenched in pillboxes; the Hiroyasu Regiment had also caught up and they had decided to conduct a night attack together with the reconnaissance regiment; their current situation, however, was unknown; the Fukushima Detachment had been shifted to the rear of the Nasu Detachment because there were no [eastward] roads [from where they were]; in the sector of the Satō Detachment, the Kragilan bridge had not been (re)built yet, and [what was more,] it turned out that the Balaraja bridge was also destroyed.

Although it was the fourth day after the landing, no telegrams from the Shōji Detachment, the Sakaguchi Detachment and the 48th Division had been submitted to the [Sixteenth] Army headquarters through the army signal unit.^(35, 36) [The unit] was short of radio sets and code books. It still had a pile of telegrams to be radioed; as much as eighty telegrams which should have been sent to the Southern Army had remained unsent at the army headquarters in

Ragas.⁽³⁴⁾ Staff Officer Saiki arranged that they would be transmitted through the ship signal system (by way of the *Ayatosan-maru* and the Shipping Transport Command in Saigon).⁽³⁴⁾ Such was the situation with the telegrams to the Southern Army, even though they had been given priority to other [telegrams] at Ragas as well as at Serang. The situation of the wire communications was also [bad]: It was not until that day, the 4th, that telephone connections were [finally] established between the [army] command post in Serang and the 2d Division headquarters in Rangkasbitung and between the [army] command post in Serang and the Serang airfield.⁽³⁴⁾

As we have seen, in contrast to the views of the Southern Army [which gave priority to Bandung], the Sixteenth Army attached greater importance to Batavia and was also on the alert for an offensive of the allied forces in the area west of Batavia. At the same time, it had reached the conclusion that the allied forces were planning to hold out in the area to the west of Batavia up to the west coast [of Java] and in the meantime destroy the Shōji Detachment. As a matter of fact, the current situation was as mentioned above. Imagining the difficulties of the Shōji Detachment, which had charged [both] to Kalijati and Krawang [only] with the strength of two battalions, the army headquarters was deeply concerned. Putting it ahead of all other telegrams, the army commander [Imamura] sent the following telegram to the Southern Army:⁽²³⁾

Sixteenth Army Field Telegram No. 128 (4 March)

Considering the military situation in the sector of the Shōji Detachment, the [Sixteenth] Army intends to further secure its strategic superiority by reinforcing the strength in this sector. For this purpose, it requests, based on the prearranged plan, your approval to employ about thirty transport aircraft for sending in one element of the 38th Division ([consisting of] about two infantry companies as the core) to the Kalijati airfield from Palembang by air. [Sixteenth Army] Staff Officer Itoda in Palembang has communicated the details to the person in charge [at the Southern Army].

What [Commander Imamura] really meant was that he wanted two companies to be brought by air from Palembang to the relief of the Shōji Detachment, but since he could not help toning it down, he sent the telegram as phrased above. At that time, [the army headquarters] had lost contact with Staff Officer Itoda who had landed in Palembang ahead [of the Java landings] together with the [paratroop] raiding unit. It caused the army headquarters a great deal of worry that the whereabouts of its [chief] aviation staff were unknown precisely at a time when his active involvement was most counted on. The fact was that after his belly-landing in Palembang, Lieutenant Colonel Itoda had dealt with the issue over the employment of the paratroop unit in Cilacap, discovered the Tanjungkarang airfield, directed its preparation, and made efforts so that the army reconnaissance planes could be deployed there (all of which has been described earlier). Then, he had flown to Kalijati to direct the air support for the Shōji Detachment. The [Sixteenth] Army headquarters knew nothing about it, because its radio communications were in the previously described state. Consequently, the army headquarters also did not know that the issue of the employment of the paratroop unit in Cilacap had changed in the already described way.

When the army headquarters sent the previously mentioned telegram and was impatiently waiting for the reply from the Southern Army, the entire staff at the headquarters was

surprised to see Staff Officer [Itoda] come to the headquarters out of nowhere. He reported: "I have returned via the Kalijati and the Serang airfields; the Shōji Detachment headquarters is positioned in Subang and the Wakamatsu Battalion in Kalijati; the Egashira Battalion is said to be heading for Krawang; the Endō Air Division has advanced to the Kalijati [airfield] since the 2d; the Shōji Detachment is under concentrated attacks from the enemy from all directions; yesterday, the 3d, twenty-five enemy tanks and one hundred motor vehicle came for an attack on Subang; at 0730, twenty enemy armored vehicles came for an assault on Kalijati, and a large column of an enemy mechanized unit followed from Purwakarta in the afternoon; the Wakamatsu Battalion fought back with the support of the Endō Air Division and seized Purwakarta this morning; fortunately, the detachment headquarters in Subang also drove off the enemy after a hard fight; Detachment Commander Shōji said, 'I do not think that the 2d Division can be expected to come soon; I hear that there are 30,000 enemy [troops] in Bandung; if I stay in level country in such a situation, I will be defeated, and I am planning to cling to a corner in the mountains north of Bandung.'"

Just then, a report came from the 2d Division, which said: "The Hiroyasu 16th Infantry Regiment and the Noguchi 2d Reconnaissance Regiment made a night raid on the [enemy] position in Leuwiliang before daybreak on the 4th, and Regimental Commander Hiroyasu is currently missing."⁽⁶⁴⁾

The atmosphere of the army headquarters became graver than ever. At that moment, information came in that "the enemy in the Batavia and the Buitenzorg [Bogor] area are retreating."⁽³¹⁾ It was known that there were zones with pillbox positions near Leuwiliang, Tangerang, Buitenzorg and Batavia. The [Sixteenth] Army headquarters drew the conclusion that "the enemy plans to put up a drawn-out struggle along the line connecting Tangerang and Leuwiliang, and the line connecting Batavia and Buitenzorg, and that during that period it will divert forces which can be extracted from Buitenzorg and Batavia for the time being to the front of the Shōji Detachment and try to defeat the units of the detachment one by one."⁽³⁶⁾

The army headquarters anxiously waited for the reply from the Southern Army with deepening concerns. In the afternoon, the following reply came at last:⁽²³⁾

To: Chief of Staff, Sixteenth Army

From: Chief of Staff, Southern Army,

sent on 4 March

Replying to Sixteenth Army Field Telegram No. 128.

The [paratroop] raiding air unit has already returned to Phnom Penh (note by the author: French Indochina). Moreover, taking the present considerable loss and damage of equipment of the transport air unit and the requirements for the execution of subsequent air operations into account, I would like you to understand that unfortunately I won't be able to fulfill your wishes.

When the Southern Army read Field Telegram No. 128, it did not understand what the Sixteenth Army really meant and read it as "the war is going so well that it is intending to expand the advantageous military situation."⁽²³⁾ Moreover, as told above, because the subsequent deployment of the [paratroop] raiding unit had already been decided, meaning that it should not press additional operations on the transport unit due to the necessity of maintenance, the Southern Army thought that it should by all means avoid a spur-of-the-moment operation that had not been in the plans.⁽²³⁾

Receiving this reply from the Southern Army, the Sixteenth Army realized that it had no choice but to have the 2d Division break through Leuwiliang and rush [to the help of the Shōji Detachment].⁽³⁶⁾ At that time, the 2d Division deployed five battalions of infantry (two Hiroyasu battalions, two Fukushima battalions and one reserve battalion) on the Leuwiliang front, three battalions along the Tangerang – Batavia road, and one battalion as the army reserve.

The Sixteenth Army decided to rouse the 2d Division to action, have it focus all out on Leuwiliang, and charge toward Bandung through Buitenzorg.

In order to rouse the 2d Division to action, [the Sixteenth Army] pointed out the following concerning the situation of both sides:⁽⁵⁹⁾

The enemy in the areas of Batavia and Buitenzorg are retreating one after another into the Bandung stronghold.

The Shōji Detachment has seized Purwakarta at 0700 today, the 4th.

It was decided that the 2d Division should divert one battalion from the Satō Detachment to the sector of the Nasu Detachment, which meant increasing the battalions in the Leuwiliang sector to six, and reducing those along the coastal road to two (one battalion was the army reserve). It was [also] decided to divert the 2d Tank Regiment.

The order and the operational directions, which the Sixteenth Army gave at this time, caused unexpected misunderstandings and errors between the Sixteenth Army and the 2d Division afterwards, but these will be described later.

How the 2d Division interpreted the [Sixteenth] Army order and disposed its units can be seen in the following order:⁽⁵⁹⁾

ISAMU Operation Order A, No. 60⁽⁵⁹⁾

2d Division Order

Rangkasbitung, 1700, 4 March

1. The enemy in the Batavia and the Buitenzorg area are retreating one after another into the Bandung stronghold. The Shōji Detachment has seized Purwakarta at 0700 today, the 4th.
2. The division intends to promptly seize Buitenzorg to cut off the escape route of the enemy.
3. The Satō Detachment shall attack the enemy it is facing and advance into the area south of Batavia as soon as possible.
4. I shall advance first toward Leuwiliang tomorrow, the 5th.

2d Division Commander

Maruyama Masao

RYUSA Operation Order No. 30⁽⁵⁹⁾

3d Battalion Order

Wirana, 2200, 4 March

1. [As] the enemy in the Batavia and the Buitenzorg area are retreating one after another into the Bandung stronghold, the division plans to promptly seize Buitenzorg to cut off the escape route of the enemy. The Nasu Detachment (to which the Fukushima Detachment and the 2d Battalion of the 29th Infantry Regiment have newly been attached) is expected to advance to Buitenzorg, cut off the escape route of the enemy, and immediately follow them in hot pursuit toward Bandung. The Shōji Detachment has seized Purwakarta at 0700 today, on the 4th.
2. The battalion plans to defend Pamarayan with one element, while advancing its main force to Rangkasbitung and then assemble in or near Leuwiliang. For this purpose, [the battalion] shall

come under the direction of Detachment Commander Fukushima concerning the advance from Rangkasbitung to Leuwiliang. (The rest omitted by the author.)

Note: RYUSA indicates the Sasaki Battalion of the Sendai Regiment. It is an order of the 3d Battalion of the 4th Infantry Regiment (the divisional reserve unit at that time).

Wirana is located four kilometers south of Pamarayan.



2d Reconnaissance
Regiment Commander,
Lt. Col. Noguchi
Kin'ichi

The Battle of Leuwiliang (*See Illustrations No. 51 and No. 52*)

The battle in Leuwiliang had begun in the early afternoon of the previous day (the 3d).

At 1330 on the 3d, the advance company of the Noguchi Echelon ([consisting of] the 2d Reconnaissance Regiment as the core) of the Nasu Detachment came to the bridge in Leuwiliang. However, the bridge had been destroyed. All of a sudden, [the company] came under concentrated fire from [enemy] antitank rifles and machine guns from the opposite bank, which destroyed the light-armored car at the head of the company.^(54, 65)

The echelon commander (2d Reconnaissance Regiment Commander Lt. Col. Noguchi Kin'ichi), who had caught up with the advance company responding to the [enemy] fire, decided to cross the Cianten River with his main force on the night of the 3d and conduct a night attack on [the enemy position(s) on] Mt. Galuga from the left rear of the enemy positions, while containing the enemy at the front with one element. He gave the order at Leuwiliang at 1400, and deployed his units roughly as follows:^(64, 65)

1. From the right, the 2d Company (to which one element of engineers shall be assigned) and the 1st Company (minus one platoon; one element of engineers shall also be assigned to it) shall form the front line. Each of them shall cross the Cianten River in or near Bantarkaret, about three kilometers upstream from the bridge, and advance to Cibungbulang and vicinity (note by the author: location unclear, presumably near Cibatok). [Editor's note: Probably Cibungbulang.] After that, the 2d Company shall conduct a surprise attack on the enemy position(s) on Mt. Galuga from the area on the north side of the main road, and the 1st Company on the enemy positions at the east end of the bridge from the area along the main road. They shall depart at 1900, cross the river at 2200, and charge at 2400.
2. The engineer company shall start repairing the bridge when the night raids are successfully carried out.
3. The battery shall fire at the enemy from the front during the daytime so as to contain them [there].
4. The independent antitank gun company shall fire at the enemy from the front so as to contain them [there].
5. The 3d and the 4th Companies shall be positioned at the present location as reserve units.

The enemy [the echelon was facing] was an Australian Army unit. It was known that that it had blown up the Leuwiliang bridge and reinforced the zone of existing pillboxes on the right bank [of the river] with field positions, and that it had two guns.^(64, 65)

At 1730, the battery ([consisting of] the 3d Battery of the 2d Field Artillery Regiment (minus one section), led by Commander 1st Lt. Watanabe Kōichi), opened fire at the lookout post at the top of Mt. Galuga with all its firepower (two guns) and then fired at the pill-

boxes.⁽⁶⁵⁾

In the meantime, the advance company of the Hiroyasu Echelon ([consisting of] the 2d and the 3d Battalions of the 16th Infantry Regiment led by Regimental Commander Col. Hiroyasu Jurō) had reached Leuwiliang around 1630.⁽⁶⁴⁾

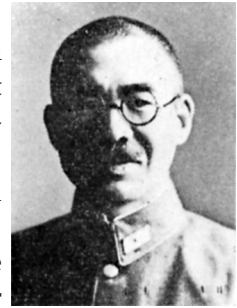
Echelon Commander Hiroyasu and Detachment Commander Nasu [also] arrived in Leuwiliang one after another.

Echelon Commander Noguchi reported the enemy's movements, the terrain, his plan, the current situation, etc. to Detachment Commander Nasu. Staff Officer Maj. Satō Hidehiko of the 2d Division was [also] present. He had accompanied the advance party (the advance company) of the Noguchi Echelon from the time of its landing in order to collect information. Recently he had advanced [along with the company] in the light-armored car that had been hit in front of the [enemy] position, but he had safely gotten out of the car and retreated. After that, he had been together with Echelon Commander Noguchi.⁽⁵⁴⁾

Then, the selection of the unit to conduct the night raid became an issue. A night raid was the specialty of the infantry, and that meant here the 16th [Infantry] Regiment, i.e. the Hiroyasu Echelon, which prided itself on its tradition [established at] Gongchangling [in the Russo-Japanese War]. However, it had just arrived and did not have enough time to make preparations. Major General Nasu asked Staff Officer Satō's views. Staff Officer Satō, who trusted Lieutenant Colonel Noguchi's ability to find opportunities and get things done, said, "I judge the enemy positions at the front to be forward positions. I think that we should not give time to the enemy." In brief, Staff Officer Satō thought that the Noguchi Echelon should do it as planned. However, Major General Nasu, who was the commander of the 2d Infantry Group as well as of the detachment, decided to employ the 16th Infantry Regiment [instead]. His decision was also based on the fact that he made allowances for the hardship of the Noguchi Echelon, which had been in the forefront all the time since the landing, and because he saw that the Hiroyasu Echelon was impatiently waiting to display its ability.⁽⁵⁴⁾

Around 1800, Detachment Commander Nasu passed down his orders. He ordered the Noguchi Echelon to "stop the preparations for the night raid; just continue the gunfire to contain the enemy and make preparations for the subsequent operations," whereas he ordered the Hiroyasu Echelon to "attack the enemy in front with one element from the left rear [of the enemy positions] at dusk."^(63, 64)

Based on the detachment order, Echelon Commander Hiroyasu decided to cross the Cianten River at an area south of Leuwiliang with his main force and then attack the enemy in front of him with one element. He ordered the 3d Battalion to



2d Infantry Group
Commander, Maj. Gen.
Nasu Yumio

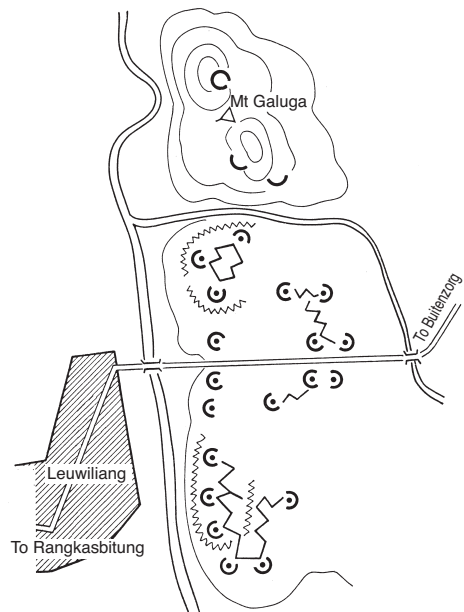


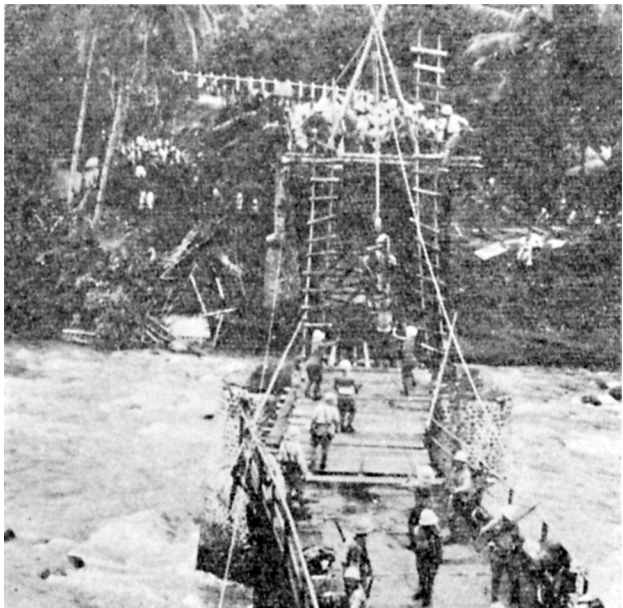
Illustration No. 51 — The [Enemy] Positions at
the Leuwiliang Front

cross the Cianten River at a point about three kilometers south of Leuwiliang, seize the enemy positions on the plateau east of Leuwiliang that night and advance to Cibatok and vicinity. He [also] ordered the regimental gun and antitank gun companies to follow the 3d Battalion and seize the positions on the plateau on the right bank of the Cianten River to support the attack of the 3d Battalion. He [further] ordered the 2d Battalion to follow them as the reserve unit.^(62, 64, 65)

At that time, the advance company of the 3d Battalion had already moved forward to the right flank of the Noguchi Echelon and was attacking the allied positions in front of them. Based on the regimental order, 3d Battalion Commander Maj. Morozumi Yoshikazu sent the advance guard to the crossing point and vicinity and had them reconnoiter the enemy movements and the terrain and, at the same time, he himself left Leuwiliang at 1900 along with the regimental commander to reconnoiter the crossing point about three kilometers south of Leuwiliang after which he returned to Leuwiliang at 2200.

The battalion left Leuwiliang at 0000 on the 4th and reached the crossing point about three kilometers south of the town. The Cianten River was swollen because of the squall the previous evening. It was about thirty meters wide and about 130 centimeters deep but flowed fast, due to which it took an unexpectedly long time to cross.⁽⁶²⁾

At 0530 on the 4th, two companies had for the most part finished crossing the river. At the crossing point, the battalion commander learned that an allied unit, the strength of which was unknown but considered not to be large, had occupied positions in Bojongneros and vicinity, which was about 1500 meters east of the Cianten River, and that the neighborhood consisted of easily passable paddy fields all around. So he had the 9th Company (Commander: Capt. Itō Kesatake) and the 11th Company (Commander: 1st Lt. Shigeno Masami) charge forward to seize the said positions, respectively as the first line attack unit and the second line attack unit. (See *Illustration No. 52.*) Battalion Commander Morozumi and Regimental Commander Hiroyasu were advancing at the head of the 11th Company, and no sooner had the 9th Company driven away an allied unit, apparently a lookout unit, which had fired at the company by surprise, and charged in column along a road of about four meters wide [toward the enemy position], than the regimental commander followed immediately in its rear. All of a sudden, the 9th company and the regimental commander came under rapid fire from the whole front of the plateau ahead of them, which completely pinned them down and made them unable to move. Commander Captain Itō of the 9th Company and others were killed, while the regimental commander and others were injured. Battalion Commander Morozumi [increased the strength by] adding the



Bridging Work at Leuwiliang in the 2d Division Sector

11th Company, the second line attack unit, to the left of the 9th Company, but they could not beat off the enemy. He [also] had the 10th Company (Commander: 1st Lt. Nakayama Yoshio), which had caught up around 0800, attack and advance so as to envelop the right flank of the enemy in the position ahead, but they could not drive back the enemy yet. Around 1000, the main force of the 3d Machine Gun Company (Commander: 1st Lt. Kameoka Takao) caught up with them and joined the firing line.⁽⁶²⁾



Commander of the 3d Battalion of the 16th Infantry Regiment, Maj. Morozumi Yoshikazu

The artillery unit of the Nasu Detachment consisted of the 1st Battalion of the 2d Field Artillery Regiment (minus the 1st Battery) with Maj. Suwabe Jirō as battalion commander. The 3d Battery (minus one section) (Commander: 1st Lt. Watanabe Kōichi) was assigned to the Noguchi Echelon, and the rest of the main force to the Hiroyasu Echelon. Both of them occupied positions to the west of Leuwiliang. Battalion Commander Suwabe had separated from Echelon Commander Hiroyasu at 2330 on the 3d and from the morning of the 4th onwards tried to keep contact with him, while firing only at Mt. Galuga so as not to harm the Hiroyasu Unit. At 0920 the liaison officer assigned [to the Hiroyasu Unit] reported: "[I] tried to catch up with the echelon commander along with the colors and Captain Yamada but lost sight of him. [I] asked the noncommissioned officer who had accompanied the echelon commander, but he did not know. [We can] catch glimpses of the enemy two hundred meters ahead." At 1020, the Suwabe Battalion finally managed to locate the echelon commander's whereabouts and received his orders. At 1100, the whole artillery unit was brought under the direct command of Detachment Commander Nasu by order of the detachment.^(64, 45)

The 3d Battalion Gun Platoon of the Morozumi Battalion caught up around 1500. Around that time, about three hundred allied troops newly came forward so as to envelop the right flank of the Morozumi Battalion (the 9th Company). The Regimental Commander [Hiroyasu] deployed the 2d Battalion (Commander: Maj. Onoguchi Satoru), which had successively arrived, to the right of the Morozumi Battalion to have it deal with this new enemy. The Onoguchi Battalion completed its deployment in the evening.⁽⁶²⁾

In the meantime, the Suwabe Artillery Battalion (eight guns) was firing at the [enemy] positions on Mt. Galuga and key sites in Cibatok. At 1600 an allied artillery [unit] ([with] two guns?) appeared on the east side of Mt. Galuga, which the battalion counterattacked and silenced at 1640. After that [the battalion] put its efforts into searching for the allied artillery. A report said that the allied artillery had about two guns in Ciaruten (about one kilometer northeast of Cibatok) and that, apart from these, six [guns] were being brought in as reinforcement.^(64, 65)

When the deployment of the Onoguchi Battalion was completed, Echelon Commander Hiroyasu gave orders around 1600, determined to seize the [enemy] positions in front in a night raid with both battalions and subsequently seize the highland of Galuga (one kilometer northeast of Leuwiliang) and Cibatok. A squall with drenching rain started around 1930. Taking advantage of it, the regiment charged [toward the enemy positions], braving the gunfire of heavy weapons, seized the position around 2100, and advanced into Cibatok and vicinity.^(62, 64, 65)

Before that, on learning about the Hiroyasu Regiment's plan to conduct a night attack on Galuga and Cibatok, Detachment Commander Nasu decided to seize key sites on the right

bank of the Cianten River on the night of the 5th and prepare for the next sally forward. At 2010, he issued an order to the Noguchi Echelon to promptly catch up with the unit advancing to the vicinity of the river junction to the northeast of Leuwiliang with its main force and seize the highland north of Gunung Jatake (about five kilometers northeast of Leuwiliang) by daybreak on the next day, the 5th, to facilitate the subsequent operations of the detachment.⁽⁶⁴⁾

Before that, around 1800, Detachment Commander Nasu had learned that the 3d Battalion of the 29th Infantry Regiment and the main force of the 2d Tank Regiment had been diverted from the Satō Detachment to the sector of his detachment. [Editor's note: Correctly the 2d Battalion, i.e. the Watanabe Battalion. See pp. 480, 496.] Then, he learned that the Fukushima Detachment ([consisting of] two infantry battalions as the core) and the previously mentioned Watanabe Battalion had been added to his detachment. At 0200 on the 5th, Detachment Commander Nasu issued the following order:⁽⁶⁴⁾

Nasu Detachment Order

Leuwiliang, 0200 5 March

1. The enemy in the Batavia area has started retreating and is fleeing to the Bandung stronghold. The Hiroyasu Unit successfully conducted a night attack and seized Cibatok and the highland of Galuga (one kilometer northeast of Leuwiliang). The situation of the Noguchi Unit is still unknown. The Fukushima Detachment and the Watanabe Battalion shall newly be brought under my command.
2. The detachment shall pursue the enemy in its front, advance toward the line connecting Semplak (four kilometers northwest of Buitenzorg) – Dramaga (five kilometers northwest of Buitenzorg) to prepare for the subsequent attack on Buitenzorg.
3. The Hiroyasu Unit shall pursue [the enemy] toward Dramaga along the Leuwiliang – Cibatok (three kilometers east of Leuwiliang) – Dramaga road.
4. The Noguchi Unit shall pursue [the enemy] toward Semplak along the road from Ciampea (seven kilometers northeast of Leuwiliang) that runs on the right bank of the Cisadane [River], while having one element destroy the railway [facility] near Deanpungu [?] (five kilometers north of Buitenzorg) (note by the author: Jampungu [?]). [Editor's note: Probably Jambudipa.]
5. The Watanabe Battalion shall immediately cross the Cianten River, and advance toward Kaum (one kilometer north of Semplak) in the rear of the Noguchi Unit.
6. The Fukushima Detachment shall assemble its strength in or near its present location, and prepare for the next advance. (The rest omitted by the author.)

Staff Officer Satō of the 2d Division had accompanied the Nasu Detachment just for collecting information. However, as the strength and the responsibility of the Nasu Detachment had gained ever-greater importance in the last few days, he had been serving like a staff officer assigned to the detachment on his own initiative. Staff Officer Satō and Detachment Commander Nasu had heard that there were considerably strong positions in the Buitenzorg area. And they judged that the enemy planned to assemble its strength in the Buitenzorg area for a counterattack. After studying plans for either a pursuit or a controlled advance, the policy of a “tactical pursuit while keeping close to the line of control” was decided upon, and the previously mentioned order was passed down. Detachment Commander Nasu and Staff Officer Satō had the same view of the situation.⁽⁵⁴⁾

In the battle of Leuwiliang, the loss the Hiroyasu Regiment sustained was twenty-eight men including 9th Company Commander Capt. Itō Kesatake killed, and twenty-one including Regimental Commander Hiroyasu wounded. Although wounded in the head, Regiment-

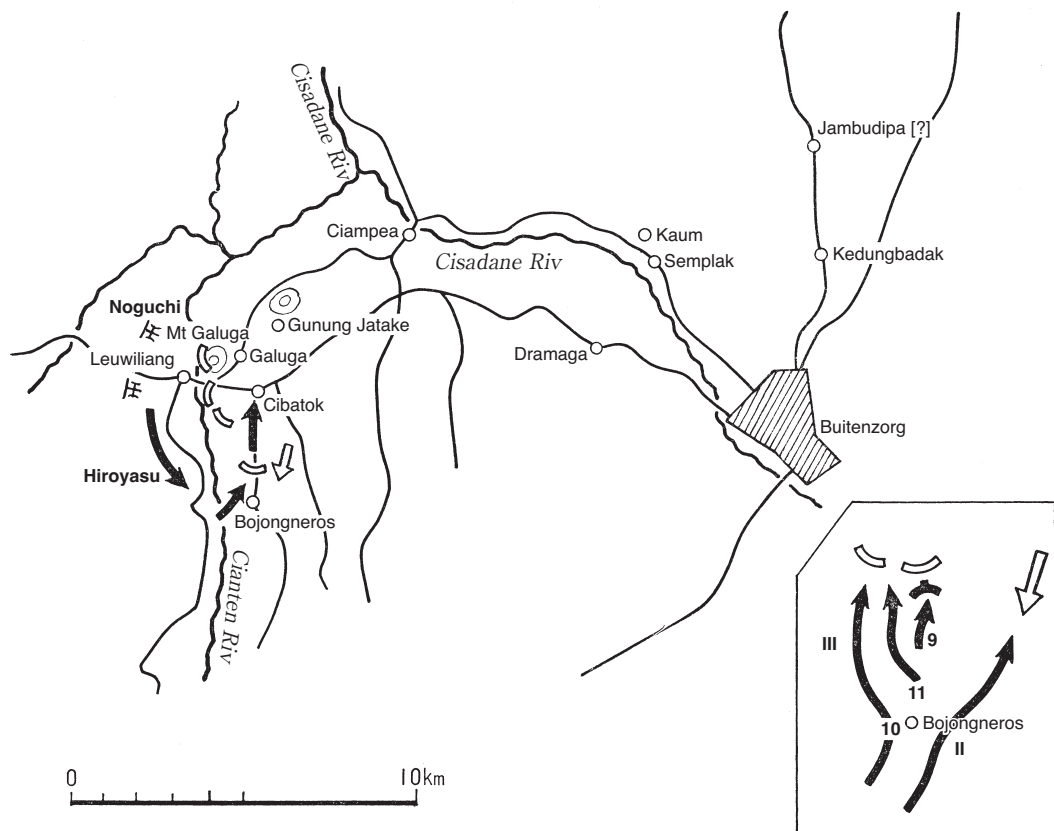


Illustration No. 52 — The Battle at Leuwiliang

tal Commander Hiroyasu continued commanding his unit. The Suwabe Artillery Battalion (eight guns) fired 379 shells.^(62, 64)

A Favorable Turn Followed by Setbacks (See Illustrations No. 54 and No. 55)

The Situation of the Units on the 4th [of March]

The situation of the units on the 4th was roughly as follows:

1. The [Sixteenth] Army headquarters (in Serang) had made a request to the Southern Army for an airlift [of troops], but it was not approved. Learning that the allied units in Batavia and Buitenzorg showed signs of retreating, the Army headquarters issued orders to strengthen the sector of the Nasu Detachment and have it rapidly advance in the direction of Buitenzorg and Bandung.^(23, 59)
2. The 2d Division headquarters left Petir on the 4th before daybreak and advanced to Rangkasbitung via Pamarayan. The previous evening the division commander had ordered the Fukushima Detachment to prepare for the shift. Then, on receiving the previously mentioned army order, he transferred (assigned) the Watanabe Battalion and the Fukushima Detachment to the Nasu Detachment, and redeployed the 2d Tank Regiment as well.⁽⁵⁹⁾

3. The Nasu Detachment, which had not succeeded in its night attack during the previous night, continued its attack on Leuwiliang on the 4th throughout the day and night.^(62, 64, 65)

4. The Fukushima Detachment was successively transferred by motor vehicles from the morning of the 4th onwards. Passing through Rangkasbitung with the head of its advance party at 1400, it headed eastward and reached Jasinga at 1800. It further continued its advance while repairing the road and assembled at a point about four kilometers west of Leuwiliang at midnight.^(58, 59, 64)

5. The Watanabe Battalion, which was transferred from the Satō Detachment, also arrived [there] around the same time. It was decided that the Watanabe Battalion should advance first the next day, the 5th.^(64, 65)

6. The divisional reserve unit (the Sasaki Battalion) had left Petir at midnight of the 3d, reached Pamarayan at 1010 on the 4th and provided cover for the shift of the Fukushima Detachment and the Watanabe Battalion by keeping guard against the Parigi area. After that, it left Pamarayan with its main force at 2000 on the same day (the 4th), advanced toward Rangkasbitung under the direction of Detachment Commander Fukushima and arrived there at 0220 on the 5th.⁽⁵⁹⁾

7. The Satō Detachment assembled its force in Balaraja around 1700 on the 4th and prepared for its subsequent advance.⁽⁶³⁾

8. The disembarkation at the Merak anchorage progressed smoothly. The fourteen transport ships at the anchorage completed disembarkation on the 4th and headed back under the escort of two destroyers. The situation at the Bantam anchorage was bad and it was decided to bring the transport ships at the anchorage around to Merak for disembarkation.⁽¹³⁰⁾

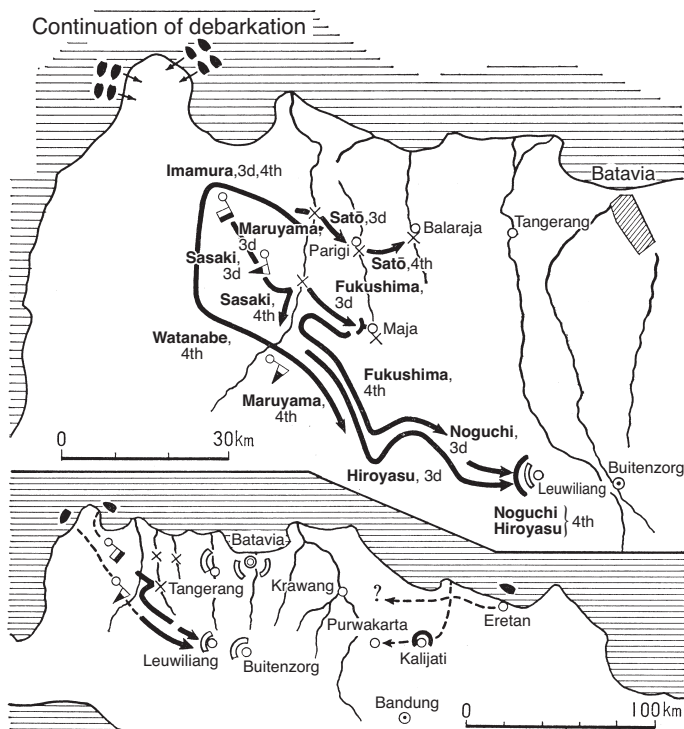


Illustration No. 53 — [The Main Force of the Sixteenth Army on] 3 and 4 March

A Favorable Turn, the Seizure of Batavia, and Again a Change of Focus by the [Sixteenth] Army (See Illustration No. 55)

On the morning of 5 March (day five of the landing), the [Sixteenth] Army headquarters (in Serang) judged that the Nasu Detachment would seize the positions in Leuwiliang and vicinity that day, the 5th, and successively advance to the front of Buitenzorg, and that the Satō

Detachment ([consisting of] two battalions) would run up against the [enemy] positions in Tangerang. Since before leaving the mainland [of Japan], it had been known that there were pillbox zones in the Buitenzorg, the Batavia and the Tangerang sectors.⁽³⁶⁾ The [Sixteenth] Army headquarters could not expect much from the Satō Detachment with its reduced strength and pinned its hopes solely on the Nasu Detachment for progress in the military situation.

However, [the situation did not progress as expected:] Although Detachment Commander Nasu had issued his already-mentioned order at 0200 on the 5th to advance toward the line connecting Semplak and Dramaga and prepare for the subsequent attack on Buitenzorg, it was not easy to reorganize [the units] after the night raid. It was not until 0930 that the Morozumi Battalion, the van of the Hiroyasu Regiment, left the east end of Cibatok. After starting its advance, it encountered an [enemy] unit with armored cars, which it attacked, and it was not until 1530 that the Morozumi Battalion advanced into Dramaga.^(62, 64)

While worrying about the difficulties ahead, the [Sixteenth] Army headquarters entered the night. [However,] late at night, it received a totally unexpected telegram. It was a telegram informing it that the Satō Detachment had entered Batavia.⁽³⁴⁾

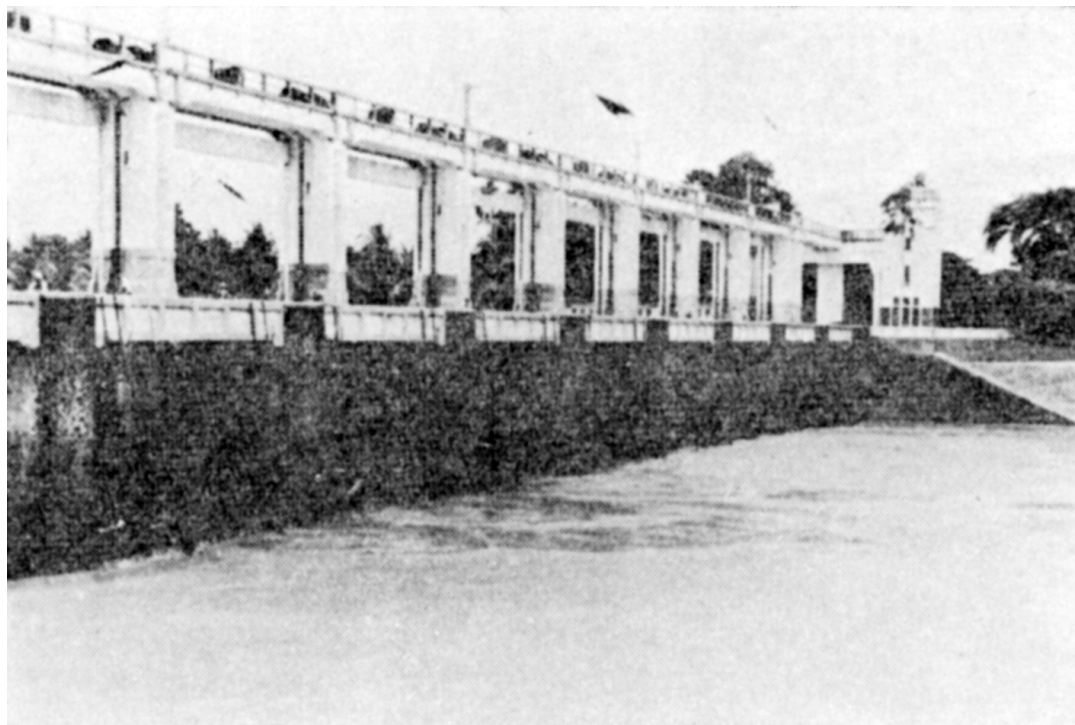
The Satō Detachment had left Balaraja at 0800 on the 5th. While it was advancing, planning to cross the river at Serpong and attack the pillbox zone in Tangerang from there, it received a report that “the enemy is retreating,” and it first advanced toward Tangerang. After passing down the order at 1630 to pursue [the enemy] toward Batavia, [the detachment] rushed [toward the city] and one element of it entered Batavia at 2130. At 2230, the detachment commander triumphantly entered Batavia without casualties.⁽⁶³⁾

A shout of joy arose at the [Sixteenth] Army headquarters. Just then, [Chief] Shipping Staff Sendō appeared, and reported that the convoy at the Merak anchorage had completed its disembarkation and left the port. [He also added] that the convoy at the Bantam anchorage would be brought around to Merak to speed up the progress of disembarkation, etc.^(34, 44)

The seizure of Batavia was thought to have saved the critical situation of the Shōji Detachment and the operation plan was [again] drastically changed so as to expand the military gains from the direction of Batavia and the Shōji Detachment. The [new] operation plan was decided roughly in the following way:⁽³⁴⁾

1. The [Sixteenth] Army shall attack Bandung from the direction of the Buitenzorg – Bandung road with one element and from Kalijati with its main force.
2. For this purpose:
 - (1) After seizing Buitenzorg, the Nasu Detachment shall come under the direct command of the [Sixteenth] Army and attack Bandung directly from Buitenzorg. The main force of the 2d Division shall shift its position to Subang. Further, the Satō Detachment of the 2d Division shall rush to Subang straight from Batavia.
 - (2) The main force of the 2d Division and the Shōji Detachment shall be united to attack the Bandung stronghold, directing their main attack on Bandung from Subang.
 - (3) The attack shall be launched on 14 March.
 - (4) The [Sixteenth] Army headquarters shall be positioned in Batavia and the army command post in Kalijati.

Without delay, [Sixteenth] Army [Chief] Signal Communication Staff Lieutenant Colonel Saiki unofficially gave a summary [of the plan] to the army signal unit commander and had



An Undestroyed Railway Bridge in Batavia [Editor's note: The photograph is actually a picture of the Cisadane Floodgates in Tangerang. It had no railroad.]

him prepare the setting up of the subsequent communication networks.⁽³⁴⁾ The staff office was bustling with activity.⁽³⁴⁾

Again a Setback

In the middle of the night (around 0100 on the 6th), just after Staff Officer Saiki had gone to bed, he was woken up by a messenger from Chief of Operations Oda, who passed the message: "Come right away."⁽³⁴⁾ He went there and was told: "Go immediately [to the Satō Detachment] and [pass] the instruction that the detachment must rush to Kalijati."⁽³⁴⁾ The reason [for the sudden order] was that for the first time a telegram had been submitted from the Shōji Detachment, whose telegrams had not even once been submitted [to the army headquarters] by the army signal unit since the landing and [what is more,] that the telegram contained a description that the Shōji Detachment on its own had launched an attack on the Bandung stronghold line. [Editor's note: Actually, it was the second telegram from the Shōji Detachment. On the day of landing it had submitted a telegram through the navy. See p. 480.] The telegram is no [longer] extant, but [the attack] is [also] known from the following telegram,⁽¹³¹⁾ which was sent by [Navy] Commander Wakatsuki, staff officer of the Third Fleet seconded to the Sixteenth Army (who served at the army headquarters), at 1030 on the 6th.

From: Staff Officer Wakatsuki

To: *Kamikawa-maru*; Commander, [Navy] Southern Task Force; Commander, [Navy] Carrier Task Force; Chief, 1st Bureau, Navy Department, IGHQ; and Staff Officer Ishihara [of the Second Fleet seconded to the Southern Army]

The military situation on the 5th was as follows:

1. The Satō Detachment seized Batavia at 2130 and continues to head eastward for Bandung.
2. The Shōji Detachment advanced to six kilometers northeast of ... (ten kilometers from Lembang) at 1840 and is engaging the enemy. (Note by the author: Some errors in decryption are apparent.)
3. The Sakaguchi Detachment seized Surakarta at 0500 and was scheduled to attack Magelang the same day.
4. The 48th Division reached an area ten kilometers west of Jombang at 1200. [This telegram was] sent at 1030.

[The news] raised [a storm of] criticism: Didn't we have Major Yamashita, assistant operation staff officer of the [Sixteenth] Army [specifically] assigned to have the Shōji Detachment operate in close coordination with the main force of the army? And what is all this to engage the enemy on your own with a small force of two battalions and attack the Bandung stronghold line when the main force of the army is not ready yet? However, it was too late to do anything about it. What could be done was to have the Satō Detachment rapidly advance from Batavia and to request the Southern Army to airlift troops.^(36, 40)

[So,] the [Sixteenth] Army headquarters (in Serang) woke up Staff Officer Saiki to rush him off to the Satō Detachment⁽³⁴⁾ and wired the following request to the Southern Army:⁽²³⁾

Sixteenth Army Field Telegram No. 166 (sent on 6 March)

1. The tank unit of the Shōji Detachment crossed the watershed to the southwest of Ciater at 1500 on the 5th and charged into a corner of the Bandung stronghold.
2. We believe that it will be extremely significant in terms of a swift conclusion of our operations to obtain a decisive military gain at a stroke by taking advantage of this opportunity and additionally sending in a more powerful unit to reinforce [the detachment] in the area.
3. However, as it will take considerable time to divert the other force, the 2d Division, due to the difficulties of the terrain in the area where it is [positioned], we earnestly hope that about one infantry battalion, which has currently assembled in Palembang, be airlifted to the Kalijati airfield.

Therefore we would like to again request your urgent consideration of the above issue.

At that time, the Sixteenth Army never even imagined that on the basis of the general situation, the Shōji Detachment would think that there was something that could be gained from its operational situation by engaging the enemy. From the report from Staff Officer Itoda, who had returned [to the headquarters] on the 4th, the army had concluded: "Detachment Commander Shōji thinks that there is no chance of an early arrival of the 2d Division, that his detachment will be annihilated by concentrated attacks of the enemy if he stays in level country, and that he wants to somehow seize a corner of the mountains and use that as a base. Staking the survival or annihilation [of his detachment], he is now attacking one of the hillocks in the mountains south of Ciater." Therefore, the true feeling of the Sixteenth Army

was to beg the Southern Army to airlift troops, but since it could not show any faintheartedness in the text, it phrased the telegram in the way above.

On receiving this telegram, the Southern Army again [wrongly] took it that the telegram was sent under a favorable military situation and wired back as follows:⁽²³⁾

Reply to Sixteenth Army Field Telegram No. 166

Airlifting the unit in Palembang is considered highly disadvantageous for exercising our air power in the Java area. In addition to the situation shown in the Southern Army Staff Section 1 Telegram No. 72, the current enemy air [operations] in Kalijati and vicinity [would put us in a situation where] most of the strength of the 3d Air Division would have to be allocated to the cover of the above airlift. [Therefore,] we would like you to depend on transportation by ship or [landing] craft this time.

This telegram from the Southern Army not only disappointed the Sixteenth Army by rejecting the airlift but also gave the latter the impression that [Japanese] air power had no strength to spare. The situation was [indeed] that the front of the 2d Division had been provided with no air support at all.

The Situation at the Satō Detachment and the Unexpected Telegram from the 2d Division

While the above telegrams were exchanged, Staff Officer Saiki and the Satō Detachment found themselves in the following situation:⁽³⁴⁾

Staff Officer Saiki left Serang by motor vehicle (loaded with three bicycles) with two guards at 0200 (on the 6th). At 0400, they had to switch to bicycles near Pamarayan due to the bad road. They rode bicycles for about two kilometers when they happened upon three motor vehicles of the 39th Independent Motor Transport Battalion. Using one of them (also loading it with their bicycles), they reached Tangerang. At 0800, they borrowed there another bicycle (for the driver) from Col. Takahashi Takuzō, commander of the 2d Engineer Regiment. The four of them, riding and pushing their bicycles, arrived in Batavia a little after 1000 and heard that the Satō Detachment, which had made an around-the-clock forced march the day before, the 5th, was taking a rest and was scheduled to leave on the morning of the next day, the 7th. Staff Officer Saiki explained the urgency of the situation, and requested the immediate dispatch of a unit even if it were small. At 1330, one platoon managed to get ready. Staff Officer Saiki was empowered to take command of the platoon and departed without delay in order to reconnoiter the crossing point over the Citarum River and promptly contact the Shōji Detachment. The bridge had been destroyed. Staff Officer Saiki ordered the platoon commander and his men, a total of ten men, to advance by bicycle and he himself returned to the Satō Detachment headquarters and told the detachment commander that "it would probably be better to send a company ahead first, even if it were just a bicycle company, and have the motor vehicle [unit] take a detour." The detachment commander answered that since the motor vehicle unit was loaded with bicycles, he would use bicycles from the destroyed point onwards. At 1800 Staff Officer Saiki left Batavia along with the detachment headquarters. The local people lining the roadside saw them off cheering and waving. At 1900, Detachment Commander Satō, in the middle of the advance, received the following order from the 2d Division Commander:⁽³⁴⁾

The Shōji Detachment is not in danger. The Satō Detachment shall stop its advance.

Staff Officer Saiki found the order hard to understand, but it was a strict division order. He concluded that he was compelled to follow it. The Satō Detachment stopped. Staff Officer Saiki took steps to promptly report the situation to the [Sixteenth] Army headquarters in Serang.⁽³⁴⁾

The Seizure of Buitenzorg (*See Illustration No. 54*)

During the above period, the Nasu Detachment had seized Buitenzorg. As mentioned previously, the Morozumi Battalion, the van of the Hiroyasu Regiment, had advanced to Dramaga, the target of the detachment, at 1530 on the 5th. Around the same time, one element of the Noguchi Reconnaissance Regiment drove off an allied unit on the right bank of the Cisadane River north of Ciampea. At that time, the allied units [stationed] in Batavia were retreating to Buitenzorg.⁽⁶²⁾

After advancing to the line connecting Semplak and Dramaga, Staff Officer Satō's judgment of the situation was that "[the detachment should] engage the enemy one after another, and carry out a night attack," whereas Detachment Commander Nasu's judgment was that "[the detachment should first] search [for the enemy], reconnoiter, and conduct a night raid after the enemy's situation and the terrain had become clear." However, soon after that, Detachment Commander Nasu agreed to Staff Officer Satō's plan, considering that "it would be a blunder if the enemy had [indeed] retreated."⁽⁵⁴⁾

Detachment Commander Nasu decided to have the units which were successively advancing to the line connecting Dramaga, Semplak and Kaum continue their move and take a large detour widely and deeply so as to advance separately to both rear sides of Buitenzorg. He assigned the Watanabe Battalion and the Fukushima Detachment to advance from Kaum to Kedungbadak and vicinity and then move southward from the area east of the Batavia – Buitenzorg road. He assigned the Hiroyasu Regiment to charge toward Buitenzorg along the Dramaga – Cilubang – Petir – Kuripan – Pangkalandalem – Warungloa – Pasireurih – Kabandungan Udik – Buitenzorg road.^(64, 65)

The 10th Company (Commander, 1st Lt. Nakayama Yoshio) of the Hiroyasu Regiment, which was positioned in front of Buitenzorg and assigned to provide cover for the detour operation of the regiment while containing the allied units, noticed signs that the allied units were retreating and charged into Buitenzorg at 0200 on the 6th.⁽³¹⁾ At that time, the other units were taking a long night detour through unknown areas. The Morozumi Battalion of the Hiroyasu Regiment passed through Bab Gadog around 0500 and Kabandungan Udik around 0800, and advanced into Buitenzorg at 1100.⁽⁶²⁾

The Fukushima Detachment advanced crossing the Leuwiliang bridge and reached Kaum at 2200.⁽⁵⁸⁾ In the meantime, the Ikuta raiding party (i.e. the 1st Battalion) of the Fukushima Detachment had one element seize the Kedungbadak bridge in a surprise attack and reconnoiter the movements of the enemy as well as the terrain, while making preparations for a night attack. [The raiding party] departed at 0200 with its main force, and advanced along the Kaum – Kedungbadak – Buitenzorg road. As set in its orders, it charged into Buitenzorg at 0500, mopped up [the enemy in] the city meeting with no resistance and assembled near the residence of the governor-general at 0800.^(31, 58)

On seizing Buitenzorg, Detachment Commander Nasu immediately had one infantry company hotly pursue [the enemy] in the direction of the Puncak Pass (about twenty-five kilometers southeast of Buitenzorg).⁽³¹⁾

A Further Setback

The situation described above can be summarized as follows: responding to the telegram from the Shōji Detachment that it was attacking the Bandung stronghold line, [which was read] around 0100 on 6 March, [the Sixteenth Army] wired the Southern Army to request an airlift [of troops]; at 0200 one element of the Hiroyasu Regiment charged into Buitenzorg while simultaneously Staff Officer Saiki left Serang for the Satō Detachment; at 0500 the battalion at the head of the Fukushima Detachment charged into Buitenzorg, followed by the battalion at the head of the Hiroyasu Regiment, which charged [into the city] at 1100; at 1800 the Satō Detachment left Batavia, but received at 1900 an order from the 2d Division to stop [its advance].

At that time, the Satō Detachment consisted of [just] two battalions, while the area between Buitenzorg and Rangkasbitung was overflowing with the strength of six infantry battalions, [one] reconnaissance regiment, [one] tank regiment, [one] field artillery regiment and others. The divisional reserve corps, the Sasaki Battalion, was to depart from Rangkasbitung the next day, the 7th, with its officers and men traveling by motor vehicle, while the horses followed on foot.⁽⁵⁹⁾

As mentioned previously, [Chief] Signal Communication Staff Lieutenant Colonel Saiki, had left for Batavia after only unofficially informing the army signal unit that “the full-scale attack on Bandung will be launched on 14 March,” so that it could get ready. Believing that as a first step the Satō Detachment would hurry [toward the Shōji Detachment], the [Sixteenth] Army headquarters was trying to grasp the situation of the main force of the 2d Division and waiting for the reply from the Southern Army. Although the [Sixteenth] Army headquarters had decided on the policy of diverting the main force of the 2d Division to the Kalijati area after seizing Buitenzorg, it had not yet shown [the plan] to the 2d Division.

The 2d Division had taken the already-mentioned order of the [Sixteenth] Army on 4 March, that “[as] the enemy is retreating into the Bandung stronghold one after another and the Shōji Detachment has already seized even Purwakarta at 0700 on the 4th despite its small strength, the 2d Division shall directly attack Bandung after completing the seizure of Buitenzorg,” literally. That was the reason why it passed down the order: “The Shōji Detachment is not in danger. The Satō Detachment shall stop its advance.” Reading this order, Staff Officer

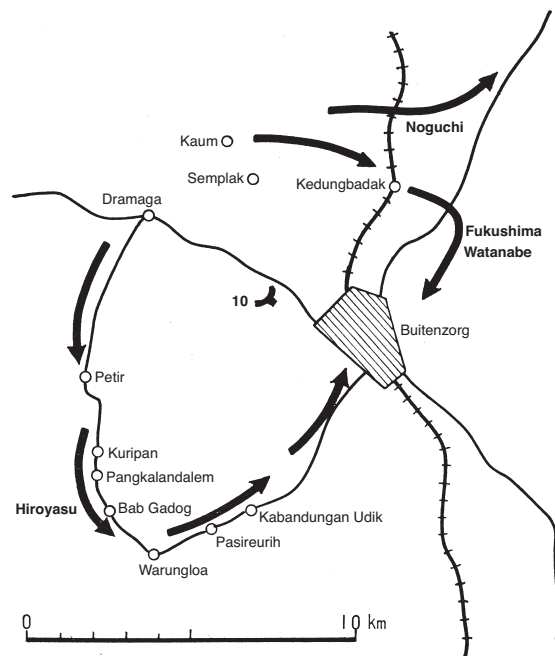


Illustration No. 54 — The Attack on Buitenzorg [Bogor]

Saiki “had his doubts [about the order], but had [the Detachment] stop the advance, as it was a divisional order,” and he took steps to report the situation [to the Sixteenth Army].⁽³⁴⁾

The telegram with the report of Staff Officer Saiki did not reach [the army]. [However,] a reply came from the Southern Army that rejected the request for an airlift [of troops]. Just then (on the night of the 6th), another serious telegram came from the Shōji Detachment, which roughly contained the following message:⁽³⁵⁾

As of this morning, the 6th, the enemy tank unit that launched attacks against us from the Bandung stronghold has sustained great damage by the joint counterattacks of our ground and air forces and has retreated, leaving several tanks behind. Taking advantage of this opportunity, the detachment is going to break through the line on the top of the stronghold.

The contents were serious even if just taken at face value. It could be much more serious if [Detachment Commander Shōji had sent] this telegram in the same sentiment, hiding his nervousness, as the [Sixteenth] Army had done when it had sent the telegram requesting the airlift from the Southern Army. Army Commander [Imamura], who had known Colonel Shōji’s character very well for a long time, felt that the message of this telegram was extremely serious.

Army Commander Imamura immediately decided to rapidly advance with the army reserve unit (the 1st Battalion of the 16th Infantry Regiment led by Lt. Col. Minamoto Shirō), and made the following arrangements:⁽³⁵⁾

1. He wired Detachment Commander Shōji: “I am greatly impressed by the brave fight your detachment has fought. In view of the steep and difficult terrain in the area west of the stronghold, I have changed the prearranged attack plan and decided to add the main force of the 2d Division to your detachment’s front, have it reach the area by the 8th, and on the 9th, under my command, charge into the stronghold to defeat the enemy. Therefore, your detachment shall secure the front line of the stronghold, the line on the top of the mountains, and wait for the arrival of the main force of the army. The detachment must not [try to] single-handedly break through the stronghold.”⁽³⁵⁾
2. He decided to have Chief of Staff Okazaki rush to 2d Division Commander Maruyama by car after daybreak (on the morning of the 7th) to convey the message: “I have changed the prearranged attack plan and decided to conduct an attack so as to expand the military gains of the Shōji Detachment. Therefore, the 2d Division shall have one element contain the enemy from the west front, and shift two or more regiments of the main force so that they will reach the area of the Shōji Detachment by the 8th,” and gave him instructions concerning it.⁽³⁵⁾
3. He ordered the Army headquarters and the army reserve unit to depart from Serang after daybreak (on the morning of the 7th) to advance to Batavia.⁽³⁵⁾

Report of an Offer of Surrender by the Bandung Garrison

It was decided that Chief of Staff Okazaki would accompany the Army Commander [Imamura] up to Batavia and travel separately from there onwards.

The [Sixteenth] Army command post departed from Serang in the early morning of the 7th. Local people greeted them with cheers everywhere along the road. The pill box positions and obstacles in Tangerang looked very substantial, which made the entire staff exchange looks and wonder how [difficult the attack] would have been if the allied forces had put up

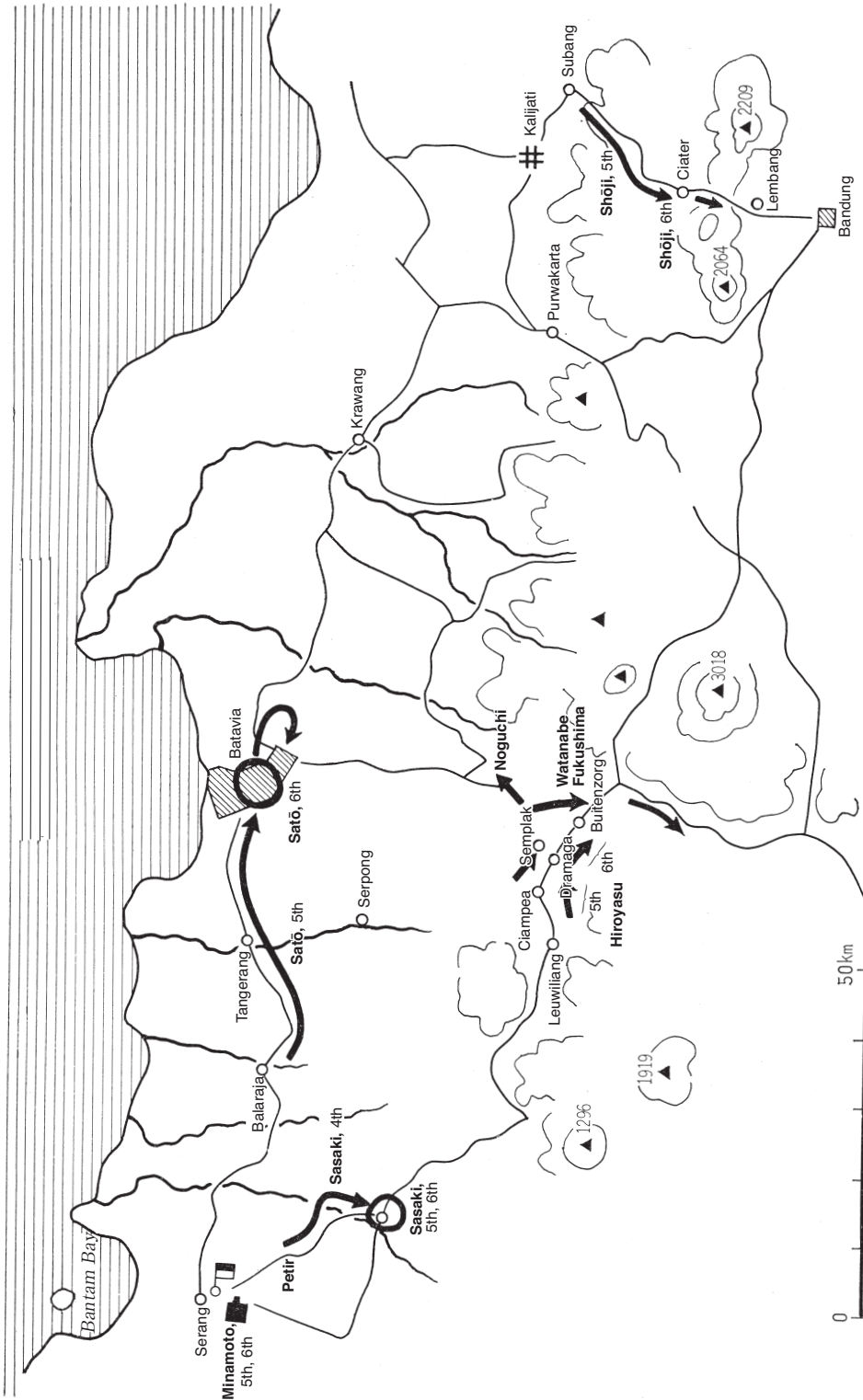


Illustration No. 55 — [The Japanese Units in western Java on] 5 and 6 March

some real resistance. Of the bridges in Batavia, those for people and vehicles had been destroyed, but the railway bridges remained [intact]. They arrived in Batavia around 1700.^(34, 35, 36)

Because of the already-mentioned circumstances, the Satō Detachment was still in Batavia. Army Commander Imamura called Detachment Commander Satō and gave him a direct order to depart immediately. At 2300, the report came that the Satō Detachment had departed in motor vehicles, taking a detour.^(34, 35, 36)

Chief of Staff Okazaki arrived in Buitenzorg from Batavia together with [Chief of] Operations Lieutenant Colonel Oda. Commander Maruyama of the 2d Division had not advanced [there] yet. Chief of Staff Okazaki waited for Division Commander Maruyama's arrival in Buitenzorg and handed him the army order, summarized as follows, and explained what the army commander intended to do.⁽³⁶⁾

Sixteenth Army Order (summary)

1. The [Sixteenth] Army shall attack Bandung from the direction of the Buitenzorg – Bandung road with one element, and from the direction of Kalijati with its main force.
2. The 2d Division shall put the Nasu Detachment ([consisting of] three infantry battalions as the core) under the direct command of the [Sixteenth] Army from now on, and have the detachment continue its pursuit of the enemy in the direction of Bandung. The main force of the division shall promptly advance into Kalijati and vicinity and prepare for the attack on Bandung, to be conducted from the north.

Army Commander Imamura established the command post in the barracks of the Dutch Army in the suburbs of Batavia. Traveling by night, Chief of Staff Okazaki returned and reported the situation in Buitenzorg. After hearing the report, the army commander went to bed around 2300.^(35, 36)

Soon [Chief of] Operations Oda visited the army commander's bedroom and reported the arrival of a telegram that said: "An enemy staff officer has come to the Shōji Detachment with an offer that the Dutch Army Commander is ready to propose a cease-fire to the Japanese Army Commander. We would like you to give your directions about what to do." It was in the middle of the night on the 7th (a little after 0000 a.m. on the 8th).⁽³⁵⁾

[Meanwhile,] Capt. Yanagawa Motoshige, attached to the Sixteenth Army headquarters, who had rushed along with the advance party of the Nasu Detachment since its landing in Merak before daybreak on 1 March, had gone ahead alone on a reconnaissance mission along side roads from the night of the 1st onwards and around that time had infiltrated into Bandung via Buitenzorg.⁽⁴⁷⁾

(3) The Operations of the Shōji Detachment

The convoy (the *Taigen-maru* No. 3, the *Naples-maru*, the *Calcutta-maru*, the *Glasgow-maru*, the *Suwa-maru*, the *Kōzan-maru* and the *Yamazuki-maru* [*Yamatsuki-maru*], a total of seven ships) of the Shōji Detachment ([consisting of] the 1st and the 2d Battalions of the 230th Infantry Regiment as the core) separated from the convoy of the 2d Division at a point about 140 nautical miles north of Batavia (Point J) at 0530 on 27 February, after which it advanced under the escort of the light cruiser *Yura*, the 1st Section of the 6th Destroyer Division (the *Akatsuki* and the *Hibiki*) and the 2d Section of the 22d Destroyer Division (the *Nagatsuki* and the *Minazuki*). The Navy was still in charge of the air cover of the Shōji Detachment. As the date [to

launch] the landing operation was postponed by one day, [the convoy] entered the anchorage off Eretan at 0140 on 1 March.^(96, 120) [Editor's note: The list of ships of the convoy agrees with the list given on p. 242, but differs from that on p. 463.]

As we have seen, the tasks assigned to the Shōji Detachment were (1) to rapidly secure the Kalijati airfield and seize the crossing point over the Citarum River, (2) depending on the situation, to be ready for having one element join [the operation to] capture Batavia, and (3) to help [the ground unit of] the air unit in readying the airfield.⁽⁹⁶⁾ As mentioned previously, Sixteenth Army Staff Officer Yamashita was assigned to the Shōji Detachment, and Lt. Col. Ōno Takeo, commander of the 2d Independent Antitank Gun Battalion, was added to the detachment as well. It was also additionally equipped with motor vehicles.⁽³⁶⁾ Although Patrol was designated as its disembarkation point, it had chosen Eretan instead, because this place was closer to the road that its motor vehicles needed to travel for the sudden attack on the [Kalijati] airfield.⁽⁴¹⁾

The fighting strength of the Shōji Detachment consisted of two infantry battalions (with four infantry companies each), a regimental infantry gun unit, one tank squadron, one independent antitank gun company, two mountain artillery batteries and one antiaircraft artillery battery.⁽⁷³⁾

The commander of the 1st Battalion was Maj. Egashira Masaru (graduate of the 42d class of the Imperial Japanese Military Academy) and the commander of the 2d Battalion was Maj. Wakamatsu Minoru (38th class). Major Wakamatsu, who was from Saga prefecture and had grown a long beard, had a reputation for holding a deep affection for his men, but training them hard and thoroughly, for being indifferent to praise or criticism, and for being a crack soldier.^(41, 75)

Detachment Commander Shōji decided to have the battalion under the senior officer, Major Wakamatsu, charge toward Kalijati and the battalion under Major Egashira head for the bridge over the Citarum River; however, he removed one company and one machine gun platoon each from both battalions to organize the disembarkation point covering unit and the detachment reserve corps.⁽⁷³⁾

Further, he decided to assign one regimental gun squad, one antitank gun platoon and one tank squadron (minus one troop) to the Wakamatsu Battalion, and one antitank gun company (minus one platoon), one tank troop and one mountain artillery battery to the Egashira Battalion. He also decided to use the motor transport company assigned to the detachment for the swift move of the Wakamatsu Unit.⁽⁷³⁾

Ignoring the general rule for landing in the face of the enemy, he decided the order of disembarkation in such a way that tanks and trucks to be used for dashing forward to seize Kalijati would be disembarked first and then the general infantry.⁽⁴¹⁾

As we have seen, the Southern Army, the Sixteenth Army, as well as the [Army] Third Air Force had planned that the units, [consisting of] the 4th Air Ground Support headquarters and the 24th and the 28th Airfield Battalions as the core, assigned to the Sixteenth Army, should follow the front line units of the 2d Division and the Shōji Detachment, and prepare the Buitenzorg, the Batavia and the Kalijati airfields, to which the units of the Third Air Force would rapidly advance when the preparations were for the most part over. In the plan, these airfield preparation units would be split between the 2d Division and the Shōji Detachment, while the 4th Air Ground Support headquarters was to advance along with the 2d Division.⁽⁹⁶⁾

However, in view of the fact that the scheduled dates for the air units to advance into the Kalijati, the Buitenzorg, and the Batavia [airfields] were set respectively as Day H, Day H + 3 and Day H + 4, and in view of the significance of the location and the capacity of the Kalijati [airfield], it was decided that 4th Air Ground Support Commander Lt. Col. Sugimura Takayoshi should advance along with the Shōji Detachment.^(73, 75, 96)

Thus, the disposition after the landing was decided as follows, the details of which are as mentioned previously [see pp. 463–465].^(73, 74)



230th Infantry Regiment Commander, Col. Shōji Toshishige

Wakamatsu Raiding Unit: Major Wakamatsu and his men, [advance] to Kalijati

Egashira Raiding Unit: Major Egashira and his men, [advance] to the bridge over the Citarum River

Artillery [unit]: [advance] to the sector of the Wakamatsu Raiding Unit

Antiaircraft Artillery [unit]: air defense of the disembarkation point

Disembarkation Working Unit: Major Watanabe of the 40th Anchorage Headquarters and others

Signal Unit: First Lieutenant Suzuki, commander of the regimental signal unit, and others

Motor Transport Unit: Captain Asami and others

Ōno Unit: Lieutenant Colonel Ōno, commander of the 2d Independent Antitank Gun Battalion, and others, cover for the disembarkation point

Reserve Corps: First Lieutenant Wada, commander of the regimental infantry artillery unit, and others

Airfield Unit: 4th Air Ground Support Commander Lieutenant Colonel Sugimura, and others

Detachment Commander Shōji planned to have a report center set up in Subang after the advance of the Wakamatsu Raiding Unit, and have Staff Officer Yamashita take command [of the center]. Also, he himself planned to advance to Subang with the reserve unit when the disembarkation [operation] progressed.^(73, 75) Subang was a strategic point where the road going north from Bandung branched into two, one leading to the disembarkation area in Eretan and another to the Kalijati airfield. Although, as already told, the operation outline provided by the [Sixteenth] Army attached more importance to Batavia, Detachment Commander Shōji gave more careful consideration to Bandung.

The Seizure of the Airfield on Day One of the Landing and the Enemy's Assault on the Disembarkation Point

(See Illustration No.56)

The Shōji Detachment knew that there were about 35,000 allied troops in the Bandung stronghold area.⁽⁷⁵⁾

Before entering the anchorage, [the convoy] came under attack from some allied aircraft but sustained no losses.⁽¹²⁰⁾ At 0330 (on 1 March), the 1st landing unit successfully landed in Eretan meeting with no resistance,⁽¹²⁰⁾ and then it acted based on the plan. Detachment Commander [Shōji] landed along with the 2d landing unit at 0430 and took position at the west end of the village of Eretan.⁽⁷⁵⁾

At daybreak, allied aircraft fiercely strafed and bombed [the detachment] from a very low altitude, which caused about a hundred casualties at the landing point and on the ships.

Meanwhile, two seaplanes of the auxiliary seaplane tender *San'yō-maru* (at Anambas Islands) advanced around 1130 and two planes of the auxiliary seaplane tender *Kamikawa-maru* ([also] at Anambas Islands) at 1230 to cover the landing point. Of these planes, the two planes of the *Kamikawa-maru* were attacked by allied aircraft after having landed on the water at 1605; one went up in flames and the other became unable to fly. The two seaplanes of the *San'yō-maru* retreated to Bantam Bay in the evening.^(130, 131)

In order to seize the Kalijati airfield, the Ōsawa advance party ([consisting of] thirty-six men, two machine guns, one battalion gun, one antitank gun and two trucks under the command of 7th Company Commander 1st Lt. Ōsawa Shigeru) of the Wakamatsu Raiding Unit left the landing point at 0610 and rushed [toward the airfield]. At 1030, it encountered at a point one kilometer west of Subang about one hundred troops of a Dutch East Indies Army unit heading eastward, and went into battle. (A later investigation showed that this unit of the Dutch East Indies Army was heading eastward to destroy the Pamanukan bridge.)

At 0800, Battalion Commander Wakamatsu left the landing point by motor vehicles, leading only the units that had finished landing by then. He caught up [with the Ōsawa advance party] at the battlefront at 1045, brought the advance party under his command as well, drove off the Dutch East Indies Army unit, and rushed straight [for Kalijati]. He ran into Dutch East Indies Army units one after another. Four times he forestalled them, drove them off each time, and [continued] his dash. At 1200, he charged into the target, the Kalijati airfield, and completely seized it at 1230. The airfield was fit for use right away. [Commander Wakamatsu] took steps to immediately send a report, but the wireless could not get through.^(13, 31, 75)

The Egashira Raiding Unit left the landing point at 0540, heading for the Krawang bridge as its target. One company traveled by bicycle and the others on foot. The main force of the raiding unit was strafed and bombed several times by allied fighter plane units consisting of more than a dozen aircraft and sustained forty to fifty casualties including Second Lieutenant Masuda. Since he could not advance as much as he expected, [Commander Egashira] assembled his force in Pamanukan at nightfall.^(31, 75)

At the landing point, 400 to 500 troops of a Dutch East Indies Army unit in armored vehicles attacked from the east around 1130. The disembarkation point covering unit ([consisting of] the 6th Company, one machine gun platoon, and one regimental gun squad), commanded by Lieutenant Colonel Ōno, drove them off after a hard fight.^(73, 75)



The Landing Point at Eretan



Commander of the 2d Battalion of the 230th Infantry Regiment, Maj. Wakamatsu Minoru

Positioned in Eretan, Detachment Commander Shōji waited for a report [on the seizure of the airfield] while giving directions concerning the disembarkation and the engagements. At 1630, a bicycle messenger sent by Staff Officer Yamashita (who had departed along with the Ōsawa advance party and set up the report center in Subang) arrived and reported the seizure of Kalijati. Commander [Shōji] immediately arranged to send the report. On that day, he could not make contact with the Wakamatsu Raiding Unit.⁽⁷⁵⁾

The 2d [of March]: The Detachment Headquarters Overrun and the Advance of the Air Units [of the 3d Air Division] (*See Illustration No. 57*)

At 0400 on the next day, the 2d, Detachment Commander Shōji departed from Eretan by motor vehicle along with the company bearing the colors (the 4th Company) and arrived at the report center in Subang at 0500. Staff Officer Yamashita reported: "No [new] reports have come from the Wakamatsu Raiding Unit since, but I don't think we need to worry, because succeeding units have headed for Kalijati via Subang one after another." The detachment headquarters was placed in Subang. A couple of allied aircraft strafed and bombed around 0900, but fortunately there were no casualties. At 1100, the alarm came that "a mechanized enemy unit is coming in for an assault." A total of about twenty-five enemy light tanks and armored vehicles came fiercely rushing in from the road to the Bandung stronghold. The personnel positioned in Subang consisted of a total of about one hundred men including Detachment Commander [Shōji], Staff Officer Yamashita, 1st Lt. Wada Toshimichi (commander of the reserve unit and the regimental infantry artillery unit), and 1st Lt. Sugii Jirō, commander of the 4th Company (the company bearing the colors). The heavy weapons they had were just one mountain gun, one antitank gun and two machine guns. They destroyed the two [enemy] vehicles at the front, but the allied tanks and armored vehicles drove into the [Japanese] position in spite of that and freely ran about the place. Even the colors were in danger. After a battle of one and a half hours, they destroyed a total of twelve [enemy] vehicles [and tanks] by frantic shooting and attacks at close quarters and were finally able to make them retreat with the loss of some twenty-odd casualties.^(13, 31, 75)

In the evening, another 300 to 400 troops of a Dutch East Indies Army unit in trucks attacked [the Japanese position] in Subang from the road to the Bandung stronghold. The company bearing the colors fought bravely and drove them off.^(31, 75)



Colonel Shōji at Eretan at Noon on the First Day of Landing

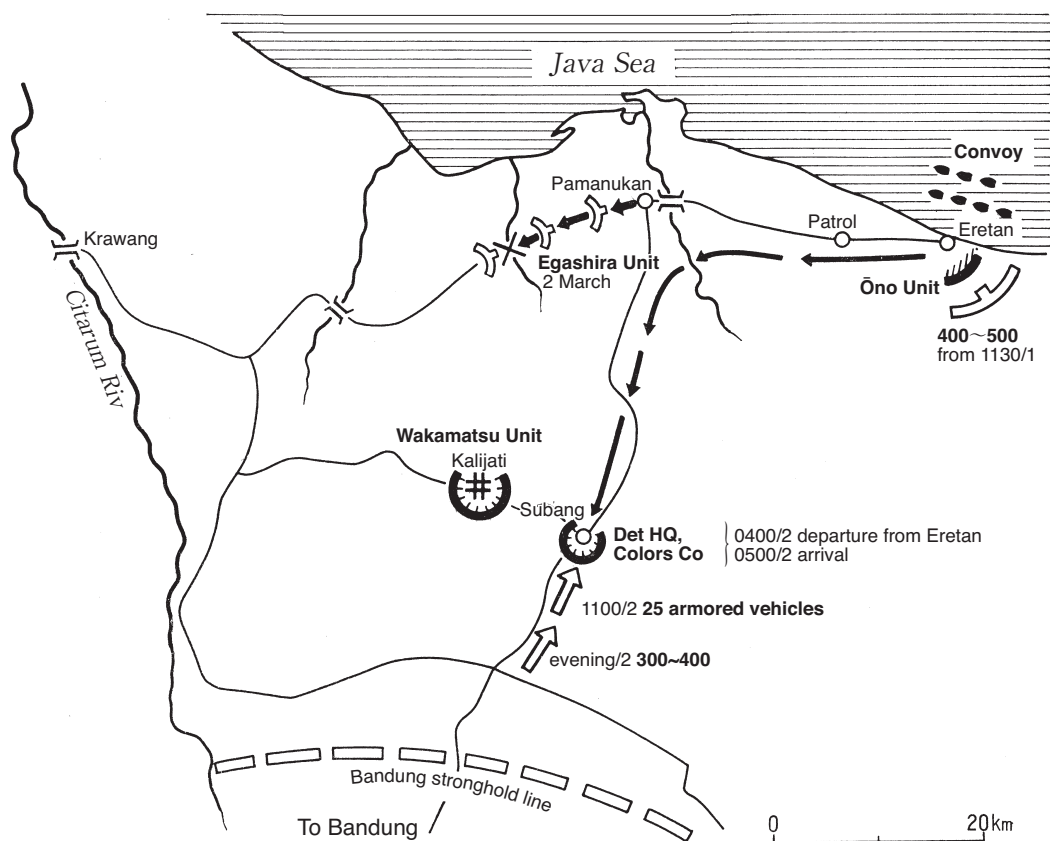


Illustration No. 56 — The Shoji Detachment on 2 March

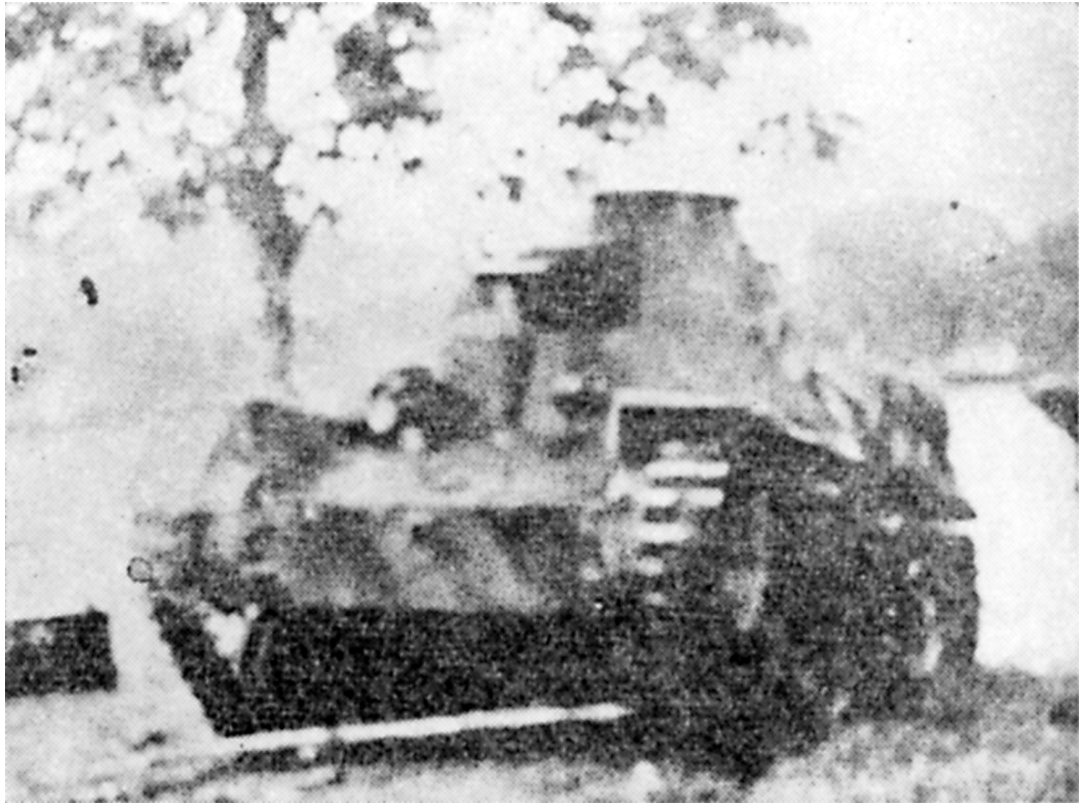
On that day, the Egashira Raiding Unit continued its rush toward the Krawang bridge, but its advance was seriously hindered because all the bridges had been destroyed and also because several times Dutch East Indies Army units put up resistance.^(31, 75)

Fortunately, on that day, the aircraft of the 3d Air Division began to advance into the Kalijati [airfield]. Two aircraft landed at 1400, followed by the main force of the 27th Air Group (assault planes) and three planes of the 59th Air Group (fighter planes) (both of which had left Palembang at 1600).^(91, 96)

Sixteenth Army Staff Officer Lieutenant Colonel Itoda also flew in.⁽³⁹⁾

The 3d [of March]: [Enemy] Counterattacks at All Fronts (See Illustration No. 58)

At the landing point, disembarkation was being continued. The Ōno Unit ([consisting of] one infantry company) was [still] confronting the Dutch East Indies Army in the area east of Eretan. The light cruiser *Yura* and the destroyers *Akatsuki*, *Hibiki*, *Nagatsuki* and *Minazuki* were continuously guarding the sea. The auxiliary seaplane tenders *Kamikawa-maru* and *San'yō-maru* had left the Anambas base for Bantam Bay the day before, the 2d. At the landing point in Eretan, a total of five planes of the *Kamikawa-maru* and a total of six planes of the *San'yō-maru* had provided [cover for the disembarkation] on the day before, the 2d.^(130, 131)



A Tank of the Dutch East Indies Army that Attacked [the Japanese Position in] Subang

At the Kalijati airfield on that day, the 3d, about twenty [enemy] armored vehicles attacked from the west around 0730, against which the Wakamatsu Battalion and the Sugimura Airfield Unit put up a defensive fight. At 0800, five allied aircraft raided and strafed the airfield, after which one B-17 bomber dropped huge bombs. One of the Japanese heavy bombers went up in flames, and 300 mountain gun shells exploded. At 0830, a Hurricane raided [the airfield] as well. The Wakamatsu Battalion drove off the [enemy] unit after destroying one of the armored vehicles and capturing five of them.^(96, 99)

As soon as the melee calmed down, Sixteenth Army Staff Officer Itoda hurried to the Shōji Detachment headquarters in Subang by car. He handed over a congratulatory telegram from 3d Air Division Commander Maj. Gen. Endō Saburō addressed to Detachment Commander Shōji and expressed his appreciation for the hard fighting of the Wakamatsu Battalion.^(39, 75)

Colonel Shōji, whose detachment headquarters had been overrun the day before, the 2d, learned that the Wakamatsu Battalion had been under a counterattack since the morning of the 3d. Although the Egashira Battalion was advancing to the front of Jatisari at last, its subsequent progress was doubtful. The allied units to the east of the disembarkation point seemed to be increasing, and it could not be predicted when the main force of the allied forces in the Bandung stronghold would attack in full force. Colonel Shōji deeply thought about what he had been told by General Hishikari Takashi long ago when he was young: “Don’t stay in level country. Secure a mountain.” However, fuel and ammunition for aircraft, and others were [still] being disembarked in Eretan at that moment. Colonel Shōji deliberately

started speaking, and told the following [to Staff officer Itoda]:⁽⁷⁵⁾

The successful landing this time was a result of the [excellent] direction of the [Sixteenth] Army headquarters and the support of the air and naval forces, especially the cooperation of the Endō Air Division. I am deeply grateful for that, and I would like to request your further continuous cooperation and support. The enemy, which is very much superior in power, has been enveloping our detachment. In addition, the landing and advance of the main force of the Sixteenth Army is falling behind schedule. Taking a defensive attitude out of hesitation and doing nothing will necessarily invite destruction. Therefore, I am considering assembling my whole force as soon as the disembarkation is for the most part complete and to break through a corner of the Bandung stronghold. I would like to request the unstinting support of the Endō Air Division, and on that occasion, I would appreciate it if I am [also] allowed to have the main force of the Wakamatsu Unit returned to my command, except for only one element to be left at the airfield.

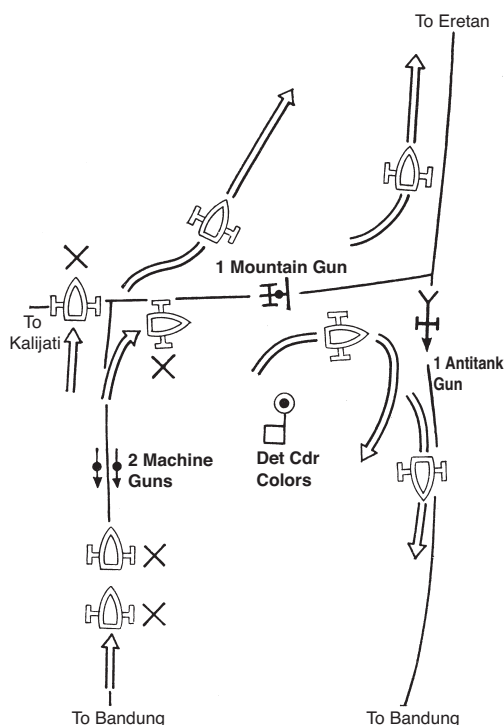


Illustration No. 57 — The Defensive Fight in Subang
[on] 2 March (from 1100 to 1230)

Colonel Shōji said that he was considering “to break through a corner of the Bandung stronghold,” but his true feeling was, “[my detachment] will be crushed if we stay in level country. I wish we could occupy any one of the hillocks of the Bandung highlands and hang on to it.”⁽⁷⁵⁾

Staff Officer Itoda answered: “[3d] Air Division Commander Endō intends to support the Shōji Detachment with all his might. The air – ground communication squad under Major Kuboki is expected to be dispatched shortly for communications.” After that, Staff Officer Itoda had lunch with Colonel Shōji and told him all about the Palembang paratroop operation of the [paratroop] raiding group, the Palembang operation of the Tanaka advance party, and the southern Sumatra operation of the 38th Division. It was stories about how the raiding group and the advance group had overcome difficulties, about the brave fighting of the Tanaka Regiment, his fellow unit, which at the beginning had been planned to be employed for seizing the Kalijati sector (until [Sixteenth] Army Commander Imamura had changed the plan) and about the 38th Division to which his [detachment] belonged. [These stories] happened to come up in the conversation at lunch because Staff Officer Itoda had been [in Sumatra] until then, and because the Shōji Regiment was a regiment of the 38th Division.⁽⁷⁵⁾

Later, when Chief of the Army General Staff Sugiyama came on an inspection tour and asked Colonel Shōji, “What was your estimate of the strength of the enemy?” he answered, “I estimated the enemy strength to be 35,000, as I had heard from the Sixteenth Army. I was

afraid that we would be enveloped and annihilated by the enemy if we were slow and hesitant. So I advanced toward the lines of the stronghold, prepared to die after seizing one corner of the stronghold.”⁽⁷⁵⁾

At 1130, while Staff Officer Itoda and Colonel Shōji had their talk together, 3d Air Division Commander Major General Endō (who had left Palembang at 1015) landed on the Kalijati airfield. The 59th Air Group (fighter planes) and the 75th Air Group (light bombers) also advanced there.^(96, 98, 99)

At 1200, while Colonel Shōji and Lieutenant Colonel Itoda were having lunch, the Egashira Unit finally advanced in front of the Jatisari bridge. The bridge had been destroyed and there was a powerful Dutch East Indies Army unit on the opposite bank. At that time, the disposition of [Shōji’s] force was: three companies in Kalijati, one in Subang, one in Eretan, and three in Jatisari. Detachment Commander Shōji decided to re-route the Egashira Unit to Krawang by way of Subang and Kalijati and ordered it to reverse course. At 2000 the battalion began to reverse course by motor vehicle.^(31, 75)

In the meantime (from noontime on the 3d), serious [enemy] counterattacks were launched at all areas [of the detachment] as follows:^(31, 75, 99)

1. An infantry-tank combined unit consisting of more than a dozen tanks and sixty to a hundred trucks was closing in on Subang ([where] the Shōji Detachment headquarters and one company [were positioned]) from Bandung (heading northward, after passing at 1130 through Jalancagak, about twenty-seven kilometers north of Bandung.)
2. One hundred and several tens of tanks and trucks were approaching Kalijati ([where] the Wakamatsu unit [consisting of] three companies [was stationed]) from the southwest. Around 1400, the head [of the convoy] was spotted at ten-odd kilometers west of the airfield.
3. In the afternoon, about two thousand troops with guns came to attack the disembarkation point at Eretan ([where] one company under Lieutenant Colonel Ōno [was stationed]) from the direction of Cirebon (east of Eretan).
4. The allied unit on the Jatisari front ([where] the Egashira Unit [consisting of] three companies [was stationed]) was also picking up in activity.

The Endō Air Division flew six missions with a total of twenty-four aircraft against the [enemy] armored unit approaching Subang from Bandung, sent fourteen vehicles up in flames, and wrecked seventeen. Nevertheless, the [enemy] armored unit further continued its advance and one element [of the unit] appeared in front of the [Japanese] position in Subang in the evening. Detachment Commander Shōji drove it off.^(31, 75, 99)

The Endō Air Division [also] flew six missions with a total of twenty-seven aircraft between 1430 and 1800 against the [enemy] vehicles approaching Kalijati in column from the southwest. It pinned down the large column of vehicles by first blowing up the vehicle at the head (at sixteen kilometers west of the airfield) then another at the tail, so it could not move from the road and then repeatedly strafed and bombed them. It achieved a large military gain of sending up in flames or destroying a total of 158 vehicles (10 tanks, 44 armored vehicles, and 104 trucks).⁽⁹⁹⁾

The wreckage of the vehicles of the Dutch East Indies Army unit stretched out for over twenty kilometers from a point sixteen kilometers west of Kalijati to the south of Purwakarta. However, the troops on those vehicles quickly got out of them. Major Wakamatsu aiming to

“destroy the enemy while they are demoralized,” proposed and asked the detachment commander’s permission to launch an attack, which Colonel Shōji in Subang approved.⁽⁷⁵⁾

Around that time (at 2000), the Egashira Battalion started its U-turn from Jatisari.^(31, 75)

Around the same time, Lieutenant Colonel Ōno, commander of the disembarkation point covering unit, was trying to judge the situation of the Dutch East Indies Army unit on his front (east of Eretan), consisting of 2,000 troops (with four tanks and eight heavy guns), feeling that he should meet the expectations of Chief of Staff Okazaki and Colonel Shōji. (As mentioned previously, Sixteenth Army Chief of Staff Major General Okazaki had specifically assigned him [to command the disembarkation point]. Although he was the commander of the 2d Independent Antitank Gun Battalion, all three companies under his command had been assigned to other areas, which left no antitank guns under his command. [Instead,] he was [now] commanding the 6th [Infantry] Company, one machine gun platoon and one regimental gun squad of the Shōji Regiment.) At night, Lieutenant Colonel Ōno ventured an attack on the assembly point of the Dutch East Indies Army unit in Kandanghaur and seized it at 2400.^(31, 75)

The 4th [of March]: Disembarkation Completed (*See Illustration No. 58*)

On the next day, 4 March (day four of the landing), the Wakamatsu Battalion, which had been heading westward, destroying the Dutch East Indies Army units everywhere on its way since the night before, seized Purwakarta at 0700.^(59, 31, 75)

Staff Officer Itoda asked [3d] Air Division Commander Endō to look after things, left Kalijati and returned to the [Sixteenth] Army headquarters via the Serang airfield. At that time, the Army headquarters had no idea of the whereabouts of Staff Officer Itoda. Worried, it was waiting for a reply from the Southern Army to its telegram requesting an airlift [of troops]. We have seen how the words of the report of Staff Officer Itoda that “[the Shōji Detachment] seized Purwakarta at 0700 this morning” caused subtly different reactions [on the part of the Southern Army, the Sixteenth Army and the 2d Division] until the night of the 7th.

In the middle of the previous night (at 0000 on the 4th), the Wakamatsu Battalion had left Kalijati by motor vehicles. At 0040, it encountered about one hundred troops of a Dutch East Indies Army unit equipped with tanks and antitank guns at a point sixteen kilometers west of the town. It defeated the latter after an engagement of some thirty-minutes and headed westward. Subsequently, it encountered units of the Dutch East Indies Army twice, continued its westward advance after defeating them, and seized Purwakarta at 0700.^(59, 31, 75)

The Egashira Battalion, which had been ordered to make a U-turn, [next] headed westward in motor vehicles via Subang and Kalijati, and then headed further northwestward. It attacked a powerful Dutch East Indies Army unit and entered Cikampek around 1400 on that day (the 4th). As the Dutch East Indies Army unit there (about 500 troops) had already retreated, the Egashira Battalion continued its advance toward Kedunggede. It entered Krawang at 1830, defeated the Dutch East Indies Army unit there, hotly pursued it, and arrived in Kedunggede at 1910, but the bridge over the Citarum River there had already been destroyed.^(31, 75)

After seizing Purwakarta, the Wakamatsu Battalion had been carefully watching the progress of the Egashira Battalion’s northwestward advance. Having ascertained that the



The Mobile Unit of the Dutch East Indies Army Destroyed in its Attack from Purwakarta on Kalijati

Egashira Battalion was advancing in the direction of Cikampek without difficulty, [the Wakamatsu Battalion] returned to Kalijati around 1400.^(31, 75)

On that day (the 4th), Third Air Force Commander Lieutenant General Sugawara flew into the Kalijati airfield around 1400 and took off for Singapore (already renamed Shōnan) after an inspection of about one hour. On that day, three allied aircraft attacked the Kalijati airfield at 0820 and seven at 1030. The aircraft of the 75th and the 90th Air Groups of the 3d Air Division launched an attack on Bandung from the airfield on that day.^(97, 98, 99)

The *Kamikawa-maru* and the *San'yō-maru*, which had left the Anambas Islands on the 2d, were under sail for Bantam Bay (they arrived at Bantam Bay on the 5th) and their reconnaissance seaplanes, which had advanced to the Bantam and Patrol (Eretan) bases since the 1st, covered the disembarkation [operation] and supported the fighting of the Ōno Unit with a total of thirteen aircraft on the 3d and a total of eleven aircraft on the 4th.^(130, 131)

On that day, the 4th, the convoy completed disembarkation and the transport ships left [the anchorage] off Eretan under the escort of the light cruiser *Yura* and others in the afternoon.⁽¹²⁰⁾

Third Air Division Commander [Endō] and Detachment Commander Shōji's Change of Mind

A subtle change had occurred in [3d] Air Division Commander Endō and Detachment Commander Shōji's judgment of the situation.

Major General Endō had concluded: "The focus of the operations has shifted to this area now; we should give all our support to the Shōji Detachment in this area, and put the support for the operations of the main force of the Sixteenth Army second." Instead of thinking: "[My detachment] will undoubtedly be annihilated if it stays in level country," and "We should seize one of the hillocks on the ridgeline of the [Bandung] stronghold, cling to it, and die a glorious death [while trying to hold on to it]," Detachment Commander Shōji now felt: "the detachment has completed its initial mission, having crushed every counterattack of the enemy as well as the presumed main counterattack on 3 March," and "since I have heard nothing from the [Sixteenth] Army at all, I want to try to take the initiative on my own authority, counting on the Endō Air Division."

[Third] Air Division Commander Endō and Detachment Commander Shōji's judgment of the situation had started to change on the morning of the 3d when Staff Officer Itoda had handed over the telegram from Major General Endō to Colonel Shōji. [The change] had developed rapidly when, contacted by Staff Officer [Itoda] that afternoon, Major General Endō had declared that he would "fully support the Shōji Detachment," and [the Shōji Detachment] had defeated the counterattacks of the Dutch East Indies Army from every direction. [The change] became firmly established on the 4th, when [one element of the detachment] reached the bank of Citarum River, and the disembarkation at Eretan was completed.

On the night of the 4th, [3d] Air Division Commander Endō deplored that "the ground operations of the main force of the Sixteenth Army are making little progress," and that "in enthusiasm they totally differ from those of the Twenty-fifth Army (on the Malay Peninsula)."⁽⁹⁸⁾ [In other words,] he was ready to immediately burst into action once Colonel Shōji would set him off.

[Meanwhile] on the evening of the 4th (in Subang), Detachment Commander Shōji's judgment of the movements of the enemy was that "about 2,000 troops are in the area of Cirebon (east of Eretan), about 20,000 in the Bandung area, and about 3,000 in the Purwakarta area, while the numbers in these areas seem to be gradually increasing," and that "the enemy must be concentrating and integrating more of its force to attack Subang and Kalijati."⁽⁷⁵⁾ Based on the above judgment and the current situation, particularly the fact that no contact had yet been established with the [Sixteenth] Army, and that he had completed his initial mission, Colonel Shōji determined: "We need to preemptively seize the Bandung stronghold, before the enemy concentrates and integrates [its forces] and attacks us."⁽⁷⁵⁾

Staff Officer Yamashita of the Sixteenth Army, who enjoyed the confidence of Army Commander Imamura and had been assigned to the Shōji Detachment for [just] such a situation, was facing a serious problem. Staff Officer Yamashita's judgment of the movements of the enemy was as follows:^(31, 41)

1. The vigorous offensive of the enemy from 2 to 4 March shows that from the beginning the enemy clearly had no intention to put up a defense [just] relying on existing positions. But although they did attempt a coastal thrust, it may be considered as having been generally [too] weak and ill-timed.
2. Therefore, there are signs that the enemy, having its attacks at the front of the detachment frustrated, is now successively withdrawing its forces in all areas and gathering them in Bandung to shift to a defense using existing positions.

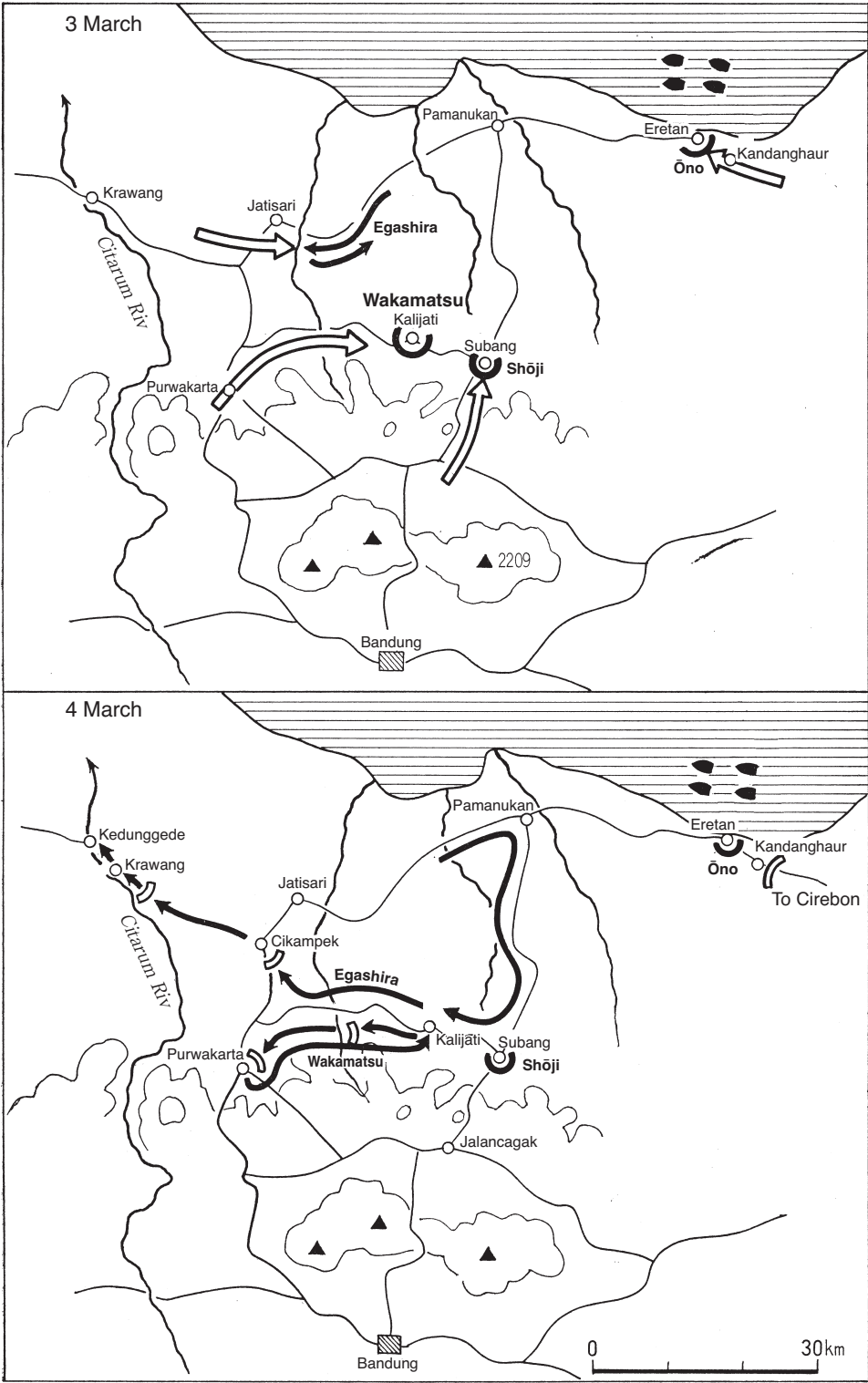


Illustration No. 58 — [The Shōji Detachment] on 3 and 4 of March

Staff Officer Yamashita's judgment of the enemy movements was far more confident than Detachment Commander Shōji's, but in his judgment of the situation [and what to do], he was more timid. [So,] Staff Officer Yamashita proposed to the detachment commander: "How about conducting a reconnaissance in force?"⁽⁴¹⁾ This proposal reflected Staff Officer Yamashita's dilemma as a staff officer, to be precise, as the [assistant] operations staff officer of the Sixteenth Army.

Colonel Shōji, however, regarded young Staff Officer Yamashita [simply] as a staff officer assigned to his detachment, that is, as a staff officer under his command.⁽⁷⁵⁾

In the end, Colonel Shōji decided that "[the detachment] should preemptively seize the Bandung stronghold."⁽⁷⁵⁾ He informed [3d] Air Division Commander Endō of his decision and asked for support.⁽⁷⁵⁾ In no time, Major General Endō replied: "Go ahead. We will support you with all our might."⁽⁷⁵⁾

Colonel Shōji immediately passed down the following orders.⁽⁷⁵⁾ When giving orders, he had made it a habit to draft them himself without getting assistance from staff officers and to give oral instructions.⁽⁷⁵⁾

1. The Wakamatsu unit shall promptly assemble its force and leave Subang at 1100 tomorrow, the 5th. As the advance party for seizing Bandung, it shall advance first to Ciater and vicinity along the Subang – Bandung road and reconnoiter the situation of the area, particularly the situation of the enemy positions and the terrain on the north side of Bandung.

At the Kalijati airfield, [the Wakamatsu unit] shall leave behind the troops requested by [3d] Air Division Commander Endō and leave them under his command. These troops are scheduled to catch up [with the unit] when they are later replaced by troops of the Egashira unit.

Staff Officer Yamashita, Adjutant Sekiya and [other] necessary [staff of] the headquarters shall accompany [the unit].

2. The Egashira unit shall promptly pull out of Cikampek. It shall assemble all its force in Subang, so as to leave Subang in the early morning of the 6th and advance toward Bandung. Further, when it passes the Kalijati airfield, it shall leave the same number of troops as those left by the Wakamatsu unit, replace the latter, and put them under the command of [3d] Air Division Commander Endō.
3. Unit Commander Ōno shall take command of all the units in the rear. (A minimal infantry force shall be assigned.)

The Third Air Force's Support of the Ground Operations

As we have seen above, on the night of the 4th (when the Nasu Detachment was conducting its second night attack on the [enemy] positions in Leuwiliang and when the Satō Detachment was about to advance to the front of the defensive zone in Tangerang on the next day, the 5th), Detachment Commander Shōji gave the order to advance to the front lines of the Bandung stronghold and it was settled that the 3d Air Division would support this operation. I will describe below how the [Army] Third Air Force had supported the ground operations of the Sixteenth Army until then and how it conducted the support thereafter.

As described previously, for the maintenance of the airfields to be performed by the air ground support unit assigned to the army, the Sixteenth Army had allocated [a unit] consisting of the 24th Airfield Battalion as the core to the Kalijati [airfield] and another consisting of the 28th Airfield Battalion as the core to the Buitenzorg and the Batavia [airfields]. The Third Air Force had instructed the units concerned to be ready, assuming that flight units

would be able to advance to the Kalijati airfield on Day H (the starting date of the Java landing [operation]), the Buitenzorg airfield on Day H + 3, and the Batavia airfield on Day H + 4.^(23, 96)

In addition, as we have seen, the Third Air Force had [also] stated that it would employ the 3d and the 12th Air Divisions, and the 81st Air Group for the Java operations, and [also] one element of the 7th Air Division depending on the circumstances. [The Third Air Force] had disposed its forces and their tasks roughly in the following way:⁽⁹⁶⁾

81st Air Group: Reconnaissance of enemy airfields, the location of the convoys, photography of the landing points, and other general scouting.

12th Air Division ([consisting of] one squadron of the 1st Air Group (fighter planes), and the 11th Air Group (fighter planes)): shall destroy [the enemy] air power, cover [the Japanese] convoys under sail and provide air defense at their anchorages, as well as the air defense of key locations as needed.

3d Air Division ([consisting of] the 15th Independent Air Unit (its headquarters and the 50th and the 52d Independent Squadrons; command reconnaissance aircraft), the 27th Air Group (minus one squadron; assault planes), the 59th Air Group (fighter planes), the 64th Air Group (fighter planes), the 75th Air Group (light bombers), and the 90th Air Group (light bombers)): shall destroy [the enemy] air power, give direct support to ground operations, and cover the [Japanese] convoys as needed.

It meant that out of the force of the [Army] Third Air Force consisting of three air divisions as the core, it employed the 3d Air Division (reinforced) for the direct support of the Java ground operations. Further, it had circumscribed its direct support of the ground operations as follows:⁽⁹⁶⁾

After the landing of the main force of the Sixteenth Army, [the Army Third Air Force] shall promptly advance its base when the enemy airfields in western Java are seized and made ready for use. Simultaneously, it shall [also] anticipate that the air ground unit belonging to the Sixteenth Army may be assigned to it.

After the landing of the Sixteenth Army, it shall directly support the army in its ground operations.

Depending on the circumstances, direct support of the 48th Division in its operations in eastern Java may be called for.

The Third Air Force had launched a campaign to destroy [the enemy] air power [in the sector] from 108°E westwards, and subsequently provided cover for the convoy of the main force of the Sixteenth Army after the convoy of the Shōji Detachment had separated and gone its own way. On the day before the landing operation of the Sixteenth Army (28 February), it issued the following order:⁽⁹⁶⁾

1. The outlines of Operation H of the 2d Division and that of the Shōji Detachment are respectively as shown in Separate Sheet No. 1 and No. 2 (omitted by the author).
2. The 3d Air Division commander shall provide direct support mainly for the operations of the main force of the 2d Division and the Shōji Detachment from tomorrow, 1 March, onwards.
3. The 12th Air Division commander shall continue his current tasks.
4. The 81st Air Group commander shall be relieved of his tasks to cooperate with the 12th Air Division.

At that time, the 12th Air Division was stationed in Tanjungkarang, and the 3d Air Division and the 81st Air Group in Palembang. The [Third] Air Force commander had [also] been positioned in Palembang since 21 February. As soon as [he was informed that] the Sixteenth Army had successfully landed, he issued the following order in Palembang at 1200 on 1 March.⁽⁹⁶⁾

1. The Sixteenth Army has successfully landed on H; one element of the army is attacking and advancing in the sector east of Serang at 1030.
2. The [Third] Air Force intends to advance part of its force to Java to support the Sixteenth Army in its operations.
3. The 3d Air Division commander shall successively advance his force to a group of airfields in western Java after those airfields have been seized and readied and continue his current tasks. However, the 64th and the 90th Air Groups, the 94th and the 91st Airfield Battalions, and the 7th Airfield Company shall still use Palembang as their base. When the 15th Independent Air Unit (minus the 51st Independent Squadron), the 27th Air Group and the 36th and the 93d Airfield Battalions are advanced, the [number of] personnel and equipment [to be advanced] shall be minimized, taking subsequent redeployments into account.
4. The 81st Air Group commander shall have his main force prepare for advance to western Java, leaving the 1st Squadron behind in Malaya.
5. The 12th Air Division commander shall continue his tasks at his current base until ordered otherwise. (Rest omitted by the author.)

As already told, on 25 February, the Third Air Force had judged that “the campaign to destroy [the enemy] air power in Java is for the most part completed today,” and on 26 [February] that “the remaining enemy aircraft in western Java are between twenty to thirty.” It had provided cover for the convoy of the main force of the Sixteenth Army on the 27th and the 28th, and shifted to cover for the landing [operations] and support of the ground operations from the next day, 1 March, onwards. [Its operations] with a focus on its support of the operations in the sectors of the 2d Division and the Shōji Detachment may be summarized as follows:

1 March

The 12th Air Division provided cover for the anchorage of the disembarkation point of the 2d Division from the early morning.⁽⁹⁶⁾

As for the 3d Air Division, in the morning, the commander and others went into action to support the landing operations in the sector of the 2d Division. However, the landing was performed boldly without problems, and after their landing, the units were advancing amid welcoming cheers of the inhabitants, who looked up and just waved their hands at the aircraft [of the division]. As they never ran off even if the aircraft flew above them, the division returned, considering that “there is no place [for the aircraft] to drop bombs.”^(98, 99)

At 1200 the [Third] Air Force commander passed down the already-mentioned order to advance [to Java].⁽⁹⁶⁾

In the afternoon, a telegram about the sector of the Shōji Detachment came from the [Navy] 3d Air Raid Unit, which said: “Enemy aircraft attacked ten times, taking advantage of the moonlight. Please step up the campaign to destroy [the enemy] air power.” But [the Third Air Force] replied as described in the section “Entry into the Anchorage, Start of the Landings, and Naval Engagements.” [See p. 458.] The [Third] Air Force did not launch attacks either on the airfields or at the front of the Shōji Detachment.⁽⁹⁹⁾

2 March

Learning that Kalijati was seized, the 3d Air Division advanced three aircraft of the 59th Air Group and the main force of the 27th Air Group to the Kalijati [airfield] on that day. These aircraft immediately took care of the air defense and conducted attacks on the Bandung airfield. Receiving information that twenty-nine allied aircraft had been spotted on the Bandung airfield, [3d] Air Division Commander [Endō] sent the 59th, the 64th, the 75th and the 90th Air Groups for an attack from Palembang, all of which returned to Palembang. No direct support for the 2d Division was provided.^(98, 99)

The 12th Air Division continued its task to cover the anchorage of the 2d Division.⁽⁹⁶⁾

3 March

On this day, the commander and the 59th and the 75th Air Groups of the 3d Air Division advanced to the Kalijati [airfield] and along with the 27th Air Group, which had advanced the day before, conducted the campaign to crush the counterattacks of the allied mechanized units. The 64th and the 90th Air Groups attacked the Bandung airfield from Palembang and returned to Palembang. On this day, the battle in Leuwiliang started in the afternoon, but no direct support for the 2d Division was provided.^(98, 99)

4 March

Of the 3d Air Division, the commander and the 27th, the 59th and the 75th Air Groups were stationed on the Kalijati [airfield], while the 64th and the 90th Air Group were on the Palembang [airfield]. The previous afternoon, Staff Officer Itoda of the Sixteenth Army, who had returned from the Shōji Detachment headquarters, had asked Air Division Commander [Endō] for air support for the Shōji Detachment. This morning, the engagements since the previous evening in the area west of Kalijati were continued, while the Wakamatsu unit was heading for Purwakarta, and the Egashira Battalion, which had made a U-turn [from Jatisari], was heading in the direction of Krawang via Kalijati, while attacking Dutch East Indies Army units [on its way]. Accordingly, support for these units became the main operation of the division this morning (which was conducted by twelve aircraft for six times). Meanwhile, in Kalijati a total of eleven allied aircraft attacked three times, which caused a loss of one aircraft sent up in flames and six heavily or partly damaged. Consequently, a joint attack on the Bandung airfield by fighter planes and bombers became the main operation of the 3d Air Division on this afternoon.^(98, 99)

[Also] on this day, Third Air Force Commander Lieutenant General Sugawara flew to the Kalijati [airfield] at 1400 and left at 1500 after an inspection tour.^(97, 98) On this day, too, the Nasu Detachment of the 2d Division vigorously attacked [the enemy] position in Leuwiliang all day, and the Sixteenth Army was asking the Southern Army to airlift [troops] to Kalijati.

Due to its subsequent operations, the Third Air Force had committed only the 3d Air Division to the direct support for the Sixteenth Army in the ground operations. But the military situation at the 3d Air Division did not allow it much leeway to support the 2d Division. It could not smoothly contact the latter, either. Although it had sent its aircraft also to the sector of the 2d Division, only the column on the march could be spotted. The military situation at the front line remained unclear.

The self-confidence of the 3d Air Division, which had increased since the evening of the 3d, became solid on the morning of the 4th. On the 4th, 3d Air Division Commander Endō, who had known about the Detachment Commander Shōji's request since the afternoon of the 3d, became irritated at the [slow] advance of the 2d Division. As soon as he received from Detachment Commander Shōji, who was a kindred spirit on the same battlefield, the message that he in-

tended to advance toward the Bandung stronghold, he decided to support the latter with all his might.⁽⁹⁸⁾

The 5th [of March]: Heading for the Bandung Stronghold

(See Illustrations No. 59 and No. 60)

At 0900 on the 5th, after paying respects to Air Division Commander Endō, the Wakamatsu Battalion departed from the Kalijati airfield.⁽⁹⁸⁾

At 1100 on the 5th, the Wakamatsu Unit ([consisting of] three infantry companies as the core, with the same attached units as before and joined by the main force of the mountain artillery battalion (two batteries)) left Subang and headed south. Staff Officer Yamashita Yutaka, Regimental Adjutant Capt. Sekiya Eiji, and others accompanied the unit. On its way, the Wakamatsu Unit pursued southward about one infantry company of the Dutch East Indies Army equipped with light-armored vehicles and heavy guns, which was retreating due to the bombardment by the Endō Air Division. Around 1600, the tank at the head of the [Wakamatsu] Unit unexpectedly came upon [enemy] pillbox positions in the area south of Ciater and went into battle. Battalion Commander Wakamatsu immediately ordered [the unit] to deploy and attack. Fortunately, hindered by the many trees, the field of fire of the pillboxes was limited. The battalion seized the pillbox positions with barbed wire entanglements on the front line, then attacked similar pillbox positions on the second line, and [finally] took five pillboxes in total. Battalion Commander Wakamatsu decided to continue the attack again the next morning, the 6th [of March].^(31, 41, 75)

Sixteenth Army Staff Officer Major Yamashita (the staff officer assigned to the Shōji Detachment), who accompanied the battalion, at first thought that the battalion should better withdraw at night, but came to hold the same view as Battalion Commander Wakamatsu because the military situation was so overly favorable.⁽⁴¹⁾

Note: Staff Officer Yamashita had the following recollection of the events:

I accompanied Battalion Commander Wakamatsu and went southward from Subang, positioned at the head of the main force of the battalion. On the way, we spotted blown-up enemy armored vehicles and motor vehicles on the road. We went southward without delay. Tanks (one troop, as I recall) were at the head, which were followed by the advance company. It seems that both the tanks and the advance company headed southward without engaging [the enemy]. (Note by the author: According to the historical records of Kanzaki Kiyoshi, staff officer of the 3d Air Division, twenty-four aircraft of the Endō Air Division had bombed the whole length and breadth [of an enemy column] on the road between Jalancagak and Ciater from 1130 onwards. It seems that this bombardment by the Endō Air Division had blown to pieces about one company of a Dutch East Indies Army mechanized unit equipped with armored vehicles and heavy guns, and made it retreat.) When we advanced to the edge of the plateau north of Jalancagak (note by the author: according to the records of Staff Officer Kanzaki, it seems to have been at 1258) and observed the area to the south, I saw mountains completely covered with trees stretching to the south of Ciater, and no [enemy] positions at the foot of the mountains. As there was no fire pointed at us, we continued going southward. When we passed through Ciater (note by the author: around 1530 according to Kanzaki's records) and reached the foot of a mountain, the tank at the head suddenly came under [enemy] fire. There were [enemy] positions with antitank obstacles consisting of [pieces of] railroad rail stuck in the ground, barbed wire entanglements and pillboxes. Battalion Commander Wakamatsu deployed the battalion and ordered an attack. I spotted five pillboxes, three of which covered the main road with their guns. Other pill-

box positions stretched in a row on both sides of them, but the details were not clear. Fortunately, the place was rugged and had many trees. The front line company approached [the three pillboxes] by skillfully taking advantage of the terrain and the natural objects and seized them. I went southward along the main road, having small talk with the battalion commander, and advanced onto the high ground of those pillboxes. When we advanced onto the high ground, all of a sudden we were fired upon from pillbox positions (a second line of pillbox positions at a distance of 400 to 500 meters) on another plateau across a stream, which killed two and wounded several men. Just then, several enemy tanks (with no accompanying infantry) sallied forth and forced their way onto our high ground. The battalion drove them off. The front line company continued its attack and seized two pillboxes of the pillbox positions in the second line, after which Battalion Commander Wakamatsu advanced toward the high ground of the second line of pillbox positions. I stayed behind. After taking steps to report [the situation] to the detachment commander, I left the high ground of the first line of pillbox positions and advanced along with Detachment Adjutant Captain Sekiya to catch up with the battalion headquarters. [First] we advanced along the main road, turned right after crossing the high ground of the second line of pillbox positions, and advanced through the forest, when suddenly at point-blank range we were fired upon by enemy stragglers with a semi-automatic rifle, which wounded Adjutant Sekiya. It happened at dusk. After making arrangements to send Adjutant Sekiya back to the rear, I continued advancing and joined the battalion headquarters. The battalion stayed up all night, keeping strict guard.

That evening, Detachment Commander Shōji (in Subang) received [Yamashita's] report, which said: "The Wakamatsu Unit reached Ciater, pursuing on its way about one thousand enemy [troops] equipped with guns, who were retreating due to the bombardment by the Endō Air Division." However, he heard nothing [from the unit] after nightfall.⁽⁷⁵⁾

On that day, the Egashira Battalion was waiting in the Krawang and Kedunggede sector for motor vehicles to be brought around.^(31, 75)

On that day (the 5th), a total of two allied aircraft attacked the Kalijati airfield twice in the early morning, but there were no attacks afterwards. At 0800, when [3d] Air Division Commander Endō was sending off a combined unit of fighter planes and bombers to attack airfield(s) in the Bandung area, Battalion Commander Wakamatsu [had come and] paid his respect to him at 0900, saying, "I'm departing for the Bandung stronghold front. Please take care of things after I'm gone." Air Division Commander Endō was glad that the defensive until yesterday had from this day [finally] turned into an offensive. He encouraged [the battalion commander], saying, "Please don't mind the cover for the airfield. I want you to quickly capture [Bandung]. Our air division will support you with all its power," and he immediately gave his air groups their assignments. On that day, the Endō Air Division sent a total of forty-eight aircraft from the 27th, the 75th and the 90th Air Groups on sorties to directly support the Shōji Detachment.^(96, 98, 99)

The 6th [of March]: Attack on the [Enemy's] Main Position and Seizure of the Mountaintop (See Illustration No. 60)

On the morning of the 6th, Adjutant Sekiya and more than a dozen wounded men were brought back to the Shōji Detachment headquarters. The detachment commander, who had lost contact with the Wakamatsu Unit since the previous evening and who was worrying about it, for the first time learned about the previously described state of affairs.⁽⁷⁵⁾

Around 0900, Detachment Commander Shōji left Subang to catch up with the Wakamatsu Unit, leading the whole body of his headquarters. He ordered the Egashira Battalion to hurry. That morning (of the 6th), the Egashira Battalion [finally] started its U-turn from the Krawang and Kedunggede area.^(31, 75)

Around 1400, Detachment Commander Shōji caught up with the Wakamatsu Unit, met Battalion Commander Wakamatsu and Staff Officer Yamashita, and received a report saying: "The enemy positions on the north side of Bandung are guarded with pillboxes, barbed wire entanglements, and the like, and are considerably strong. They seem to be equipped with more than a dozen guns and defended by some 3,000 troops. The Dutch East Indies Army [there] is gradually increasing [its troops]. There are cliffs here and there in front of the positions, which seem to make it difficult to pass through, and both sides of the positions are covered with jungle, which also seem to make it difficult to pass through." (Note: From the recollections of the detachment commander.) Detachment Commander [Shōji] ordered Battalion Commander Wakamatsu to "seize more of these outpost-like positions of the Dutch East Indies Army and continue to reconnoiter the situation of the main position," and he gave orders to the artillery battalion commander to cooperate in the task [as well]. Colonel Shōji judged that the positions which the Wakamatsu Unit had seized the previous evening were forward positions, that the positions with pillboxes just in front of the unit were something like outposts [of the main position], and that there [must be] a main position on the ridgeline in the rear. Around that time, the shift of Egashira Battalion was delayed due to motor vehicle trouble. On that day, the Endō Air Division supported the detachment again from morning onwards.⁽⁷⁵⁾

That morning, before the arrival of Colonel Shōji, Unit Commander Wakamatsu had unexpectedly run into and engaged a[n enemy] mechanized unit, which had counterattacked from the direction of Bandung. When Detachment Commander Shōji left after his talk with Battalion Commander Wakamatsu, the questioning of the prisoners of war of the Dutch East Indies Army who had been taken in the engagement in the morning was in progress.⁽³¹⁾

Note: Staff Officer Yamashita had the following recollection of the events:

I hailed the morning of the 6th in the same trench as Battalion Commander Wakamatsu. Since that morning, the enemy artillery had been firing [at us]. Battalion Commander Wakamatsu said: "The enemy artillery doesn't amount to much. Moreover, all the shells are falling behind us, passing high over our heads. It is not worth fearing." Just then, an enemy [unit] came counterattacking from the direction of Bandung. The enemy, attacking in front of my position, was about one company. The battalion engaged the enemy in this unexpected encounter in the forest and the engagement lasted till about noon. The enemy was defeated. We were able to take thirty to forty prisoners.

From the statement of a prisoner of war, it turned out that the artillery in front was a Dutch East Indies Army artillery [unit] consisting of about one battery only, that the force defending the positions was [also] Dutch East Indies Army troops, but few in number, that there was a detour in the jungle to the west, and the like. Guided by this prisoner of war, the Wakamatsu unit advanced along the byway through the jungle and headed to the west of the position that the detachment commander had indicated as "something like an outpost," and came to a col to the west of the position. The place that [Detachment Commander Shōji] had considered as "something like an outpost" was [in fact] the main position (the Cicenang position)



A Pillbox Position of the Bandung Stronghold

on the ridgeline. There was a thick fog. Taking advantage of the thick fog, Battalion Commander Wakamatsu quickly deployed the battalion and prepared for an attack. When the fog cleared away, the battalion charged all at once. The Dutch East Indies Army unit was totally taken by surprise; it fled in a rout to the hillock behind the position. The hillock in the rear was a reserve position for the main position and had not yet been completed. There was another position on the southeast side of the main road. Both of these positions were by far inferior to the one just seized. Seeing the Dutch East Indies Army retreating in utter confusion toward the above-mentioned reserve position, Staff Officer Yamashita suggested to Battalion Commander Wakamatsu: "Let's pursue them." The commander, however, did not agree. Battalion Commander Wakamatsu believed that he had taken complete control of the Bandung stronghold line by occupying the present position. Of course, he knew that he ought to pursue them. He [also] believed that he could "easily enter Bandung in pursuit of the defeated enemy." Nevertheless, out of friendship for Battalion Commander Egashira, who was four years his junior [at the academy] and who was hurrying up from the rear to catch up, he did not try to seek the honor. Battalion Commander Wakamatsu ordered the battalion to secure the present position. At this time, it was gradually getting dark.

Staff Officer Yamashita was about to descend the mountain to report the situation to the detachment headquarters, but judging that Detachment Commander [Shōji] must be on his

way to catch up and afraid that they would cross each other, he reversed course and returned to the trench where Battalion Commander Wakamatsu was positioned.

In this period, the detachment headquarters was positioned to the south of Ciater (near the previously mentioned second line of pillbox positions).⁽⁷⁵⁾

The Endō Air Division supported the Wakamatsu Unit in the attack on the stronghold with almost all its strength the whole day on the 6th as well. The fighter plane unit launched seven times a total of twenty aircraft in support. Its air groups of assault planes and light bombers (i.e. the 27th, the 75th and the 90th Air Groups) supported the operations with a total of seventy aircraft. On that day, one antiaircraft artillery battery arrived for the air defense at the Kalijati airfield, but Air Division Commander Endō sent this antiaircraft artillery battery to the stronghold line, saying: "This battery should be employed for the artillery of the Shōji Detachment because the detachment does not have sufficient artillery." On that day, there were no attacks by allied aircraft on the Kalijati airfield. On that day, Air Division Commander Endō [also] sent a total of nine light bombers to support the 2d Division, which had seized Batavia on the night of the 5th and Buitenzorg on the morning of the 6th.^(98, 99)

The 7th [of March]: The Bandung Garrison Offers to Surrender

As we have seen, [the Wakamatsu Unit] had seized the most important position on the ridge-line (the highland on the west side of the main road) on the evening of the 6th. At daybreak on the 7th, the Wakamatsu Battalion, which had stayed up all night securing the position, started mopping up [the enemy] at all positions near the road on the ridgeline. To be precise, it [first] mopped up with one powerful element [the enemy] at the reserve position (an uncompleted position on the west side of the main road) behind the Cicenang [position] on the morning of the 7th, and then [mopped up] those at the position southeast of the Cicenang position from the rear. While keeping his main force on the west side of the main road, Battalion Commander Wakamatsu deployed one element on the col above the main road. It was out of consideration for the Egashira Battalion, i.e. on the arrival of the battalion, by letting it use the main road (a motor road), he would let it be the first to enter Bandung.⁽⁴¹⁾

At the detachment headquarters positioned to the south of Ciater (near the previously mentioned second line of pillbox positions), Detachment Commander Shōji was worried about the Wakamatsu Unit because contact with the unit had been lost since the evening of the 6th. Around 0630 (on the morning of the 7th) Deputy Regimental Adjutant Nakajō returned to the headquarters and reported that the Wakamatsu Unit had seized last evening "the position that had been taken for something like an outpost," but that it had turned out to be the main and most important position, and that since daybreak of that day, the 7th, the unit had been mopping up the enemy at the line of positions across the mountain ridge. The detachment commander immediately rushed to the scene by car, met Battalion Commander Wakamatsu around 0700 to learn that the latter had completed seizing the positions across the mountain ridge, and congratulated him on his success.⁽⁷⁵⁾

Staff Officer Yamashita offered his opinion that [the detachment] should carry out the pursuit. Colonel Shōji accepted this opinion, but he [also] accepted Battalion Commander Wakamatsu's opinion regarding the disposition of forces to be employed in the pursuit. The detachment commander decided to wait for the Egashira Battalion and in the pursuit of the defeated enemy first advance to the edge of the plateau. He deployed his troops in such a

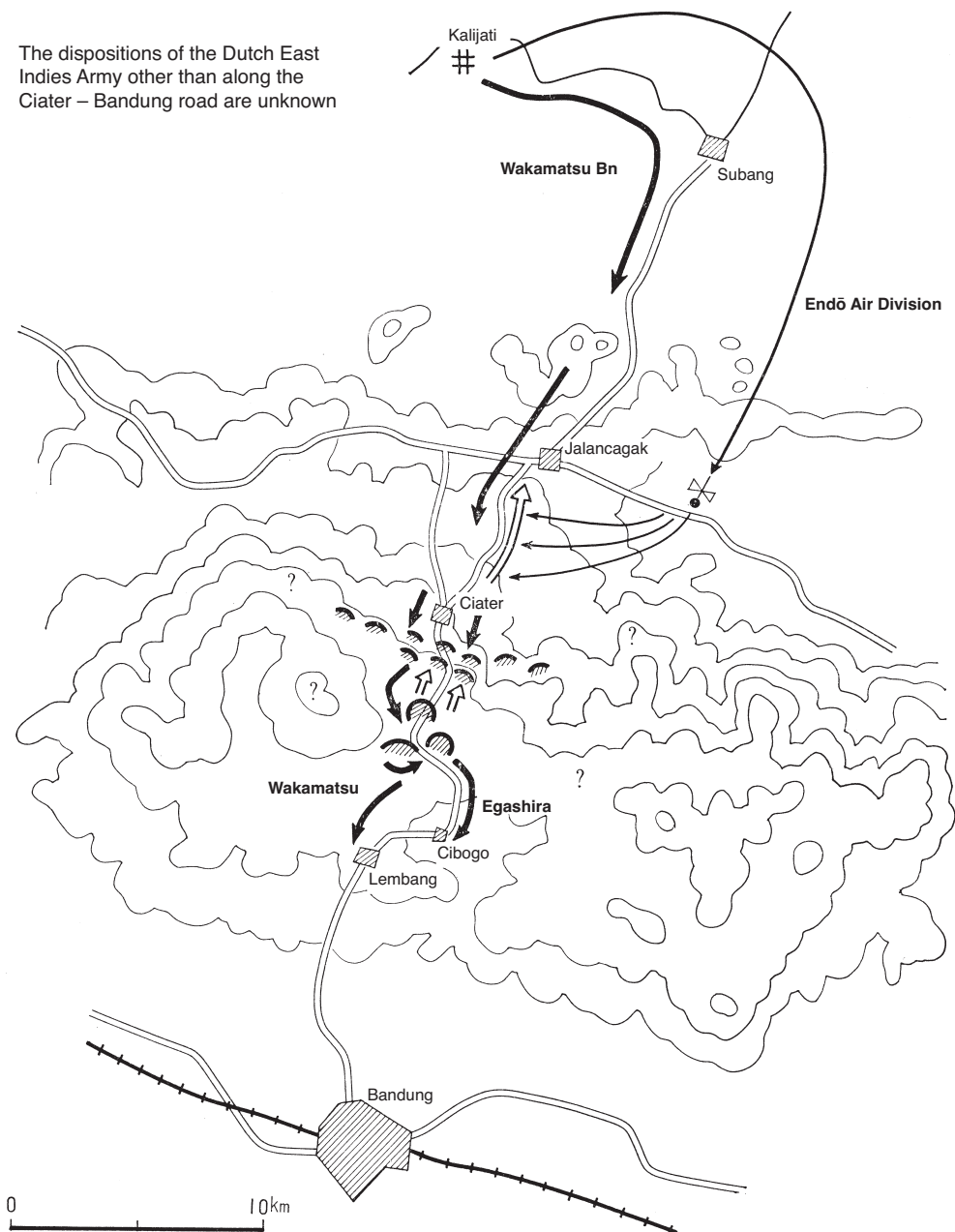


Illustration No. 59 — [The Military Situation Between] 5 and 7 March

way that the Wakamatsu Unit as the right pursuit unit to the west of the main road and the Egashira Battalion (minus two companies) as the left pursuit unit in the sector of the main road would respectively attack the enemy still there and first of all pursue them to the edge of the plateau.^(41, 75)

As the Egashira Battalion was late due to motor vehicle trouble, the detachment commander had the Wakamatsu Battalion depart at 1300 before the arrival of the Egashira Battal-

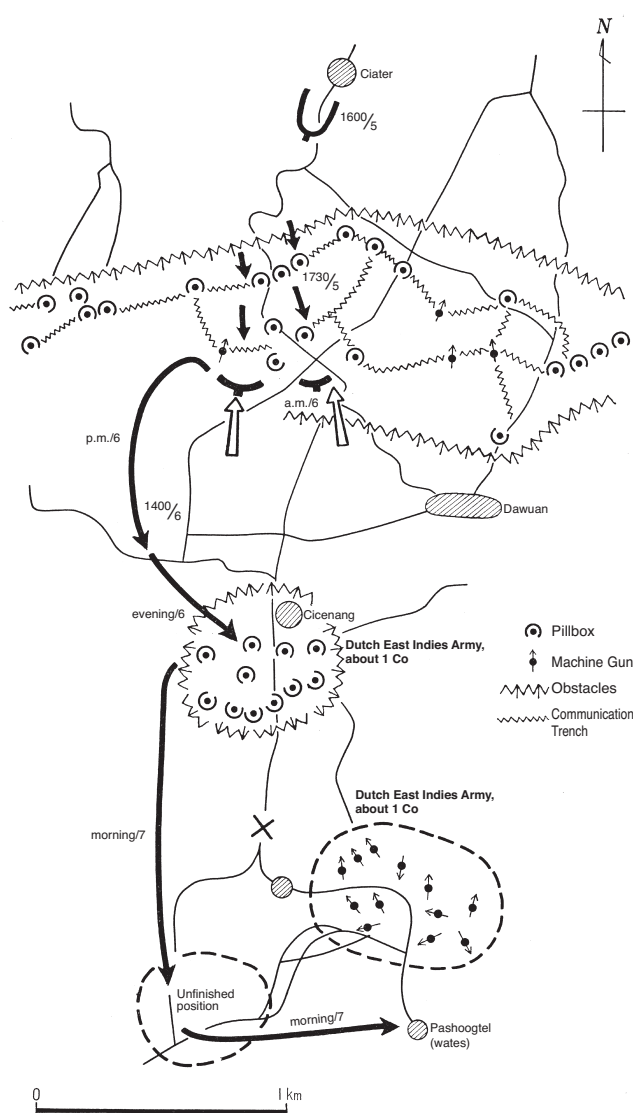


Illustration No. 60 — The Attacks of the Wakamatsu Battalion of the Shoji Detachment from Ciater to the Pass

will send Staff Officer Yamashita and others to the Isola Hotel in the suburbs of Bandung at 1000 tomorrow, the 8th, for negotiations." The bearer wore an expression as if convinced that [Twenty-fifth] Army Commander Yamashita, who had captured Malaya, had come to this front. But realizing that it was Staff Officer Yamashita, he took his leave with a perplexed look.⁽⁷⁵⁾

Colonel Shōji immediately wired Army Commander [Imamura] to ask for instructions.⁽⁷⁵⁾

Before daybreak on that day (the 7th), allied aircraft had raided the Kalijati airfield, which had caused more than twenty casualties. [3d] Air Division Commander Endō conducted a retaliatory strike with sixteen aircraft at dawn and destroyed ten-odd aircraft at the Tasik-

ion. He wanted to show an ardor for advance [on the part of the Japanese troops], so as not to give the enemy time to gather its strength and get ready [to fight back]. The Egashira Battalion got to the pass at 1500, and continued its advance southward.^(31, 41, 75)

Although due to a squall and the bombardment by the Endō Air Division the road was muddy and the bridges had been destroyed, the Wakamatsu Battalion entered Lembang at 2000, then advanced to the plateau south of the city, and took up a position that overlooked Bandung below. The detachment commander decided to maintain all night this posture of readiness and kept on concentrating his force.^(31, 41, 75)

Around 2100, Unit Commander Egashira (whose battalion had stopped at Cibogo, located northeast of Lembang, because the bridge there had been destroyed) reported that a bearer of a flag of truce had come to the front of the 3d Company. [The detachment commander] immediately had the bearer escorted to him and received him. The bearer (a Dutch captain) said: "I have come as envoy of Bandung Garrison Commander Major General Pesman. As he has the intention to surrender, he would like the attack on Bandung to be suspended." Colonel Shōji said: "I

malaya airfield (eighty kilometers southeast of Bandung). On that day, a total of twenty-five aircraft of the fighter plane unit and a total of sixty-five aircraft of the assault plane and the light bomber units of the Endō Air Division directly supported the Shōji Detachment, and a total of fourteen aircraft of the light bomber unit attacked Bandung. On that day (the 7th), when the Shōji Detachment pursued [the Bandung Garrison] from the ridgeline of the Bandung stronghold to the city of Bandung with the support of the Endō Air Division and made the Bandung Garrison surrender, Air Division Commander Endō received a telegram from the Sixteenth Army, saying: "Because the Sixteenth Army will rapidly divert the 2d Division and attack the Bandung stronghold with the 2d Division and the Shōji Detachment together, it requests on that occasion an air strike on Bandung on 10 March." (96, 98, 99)

(4) The Surrender of the Dutch East Indies Army

The Meeting with the Governor-General and His Party

Late at night on the 7th (after 0000 on the 8th), the [Sixteenth] Army headquarters in Batavia learned that "at 2230 on the 7th, an offer of surrender [was made] to the Shōji Detachment." It immediately wired to Detachment Commander Shōji, saying: "(1) The meeting shall be held at the Isola Hotel in Bandung at 1000 on the 8th; (2) See to it that not only Major General Pesman but also Governor-General [Tjarda van] Starkenborgh [Stachouwer], and Lieutenant General Ter Poorten, commander of the Dutch East Indies Army (chief of the Dutch East Indies Army Department) attend the meeting." But soon after that, [the army headquarters] changed it, and wired [again] that [the detachment] should pass the message that (1) the time and venue of the meeting should be changed to 1400 on the 8th at Kalijati, and that (2) if the governor-general of the Dutch East Indies and the Dutch East Indies Army commander would come to the said place at the said time accompanied by the necessary staff officers and meet the commander of the Japanese Army to directly offer a cease-fire, [they would be] instantly [informed of] the decision of whether it would be accepted or not, and that their safety on the way [to Kalijati] and back within the area occupied by [the Japanese] would be guaranteed. (35, 98)

Army Commander Imamura planned to steer the offer of surrender from the commander of the Bandung sector to the surrender of all the allied forces in the Dutch East Indies. He gave a direct order to Staff Officer Saiki to depart and convey to 2d Division Commander Maruyama the message that "the enemy is starting to lose its fighting spirit," and that "the shift of the 2d Division needs to be carried out as quickly as possible in order to take advantage of this opportunity," while he himself decided to advance to Kalijati with Staff Officer Okazaki and the other staff by 1400. (34, 35)

At 0800, Staff Officer Saiki left Batavia, arrived in Buitenzorg at 0900, and delivered the message to 2d Division Commander Maruyama. (34) At that time, the situation of the 2d Division was as follows:

1. The 2d Division, which had seized Buitenzorg on the morning of the 6th and received [Sixteenth] Army order(s) that evening to shift to the northern front of the Bandung stronghold with its main force, decided to [first] shift to the Purwakarta area with its main force. It gave order(s) to the Nasu Detachment (from which the reconnaissance regiment, the Fukushima Regiment and the Endō Battalion were removed, and to which the main force of the Sasaki Battalion was newly added at 0800 on the 7th) to pursue the enemy at its front while advancing toward the direction of Bandung and gain a footing as widely as possible so as to have an advantage in subsequent

engagements. [Editor's note: On p. 496 the Endō Battalion is called the Watanabe Battalion.] To the Satō Detachment (to which the Endō [Watanabe?] Battalion would be returned from the Nasu Detachment) it gave orders to prepare in Batavia and vicinity for the advance toward Purwakarta; to the Noguchi Detachment (whose assignment to the Nasu Detachment was lifted, and to which one element of the Sasaki Battalion was added at 0800 on the 7th) it gave orders to prepare in Buitenzorg for the advance toward Purwakarta. It [further] gave order(s) to the Fukushima Detachment (whose assignment to the Nasu Detachment would be lifted) to prepare in the area between Buitenzorg and Leuwiliang for the advance toward Purwakarta.⁽⁵⁹⁾

2. The Nasu Detachment (which had seized Buitenzorg on the morning of the 6th) had sent one company in advance, leaving Buitenzorg at 1700 on the 6th for Cipayung and vicinity, which was located about ten kilometers southeast of Buitenzorg. It [also] separately had one platoon rush along the Buitenzorg – Cibadak – Sukabumi road (a national road) to secure the railway, and then had the 2d Battalion of the regiment (the Hiroyasu Regiment) pursue [the enemy] along this area that night. However, the advance party encountered an allied unit in Cibadak and vicinity (some thirty kilometers south of Buitenzorg), and sustained many casualties. This [incident], along with the destroyed bridges, made [the detachment] give up the pursuit from this direction and have [the advance party and the battalion] reverse course. The main force of the detachment (which was reorganized and became [a unit of] a total of three battalions as the core, consisting of the Onoguchi 2d Battalion and the Morozumi 3d Battalion of the Hiroyasu Regiment, and the main force of the Sasaki Battalion, which had been the divisional reserve), left Buitenzorg at 2100 on the 7th, and was advancing toward Ciranjang along the Puncak Pass (some twenty-five kilometers southeast of Buitenzorg) – Ciranjang (forty kilometers west of Bandung) road.^(31, 61)
3. The Endō [Watanabe?] Battalion was returned to the Satō Detachment by the divisional order of the 6th. The Fukushima Detachment had the Ikuta 1st Battalion leave Buitenzorg toward Batavia by rail at 1330 on the 7th, while having its main force stand by in Buitenzorg.^(58, 63)

Staff Officer Saiki told Division Commander Maruyama: "Army Commander Imamura has strongly demanded that the 2d Division should complete its advance into the area north of the Bandung stronghold within twenty-four hours."⁽³⁴⁾

At that time, Army Commander Imamura had left Batavia and was heading for Kalijati. [Meanwhile,] Air Division Commander Endō in Kalijati had received a telegram with the "request to suspend the bombing" at 0800, after which he learned that an offer of surrender had been made to the Shōji Detachment on the previous night, and that a meeting between the Sixteenth Army and the allied forces would be held at the Isola Hotel in Bandung at 1000 that day. Detachment Commander Shōji had dispatched Staff Officer Yamashita to the Isola Hotel as military envoy.^(75, 98)

Staff Officer Saiki, who had delivered the message to Divisional Commander Maruyama at 0900, immediately reversed course and rushed to the Krawang bridge. Because the bridge had been destroyed, there was an endless column of motor vehicles that had come to a standstill [before the bridge]. He caught up with Army Commander [Imamura] at the crossing point in Krawang. The army commander was trying to build a raft with iron pontoons to ferry the motor vehicles across the river.⁽³⁴⁾

At that time, having learned that the venue of the meeting had been changed and that the army commander had left Batavia, Air Divisional Commander Endō in Kalijati offered a car to pick up the commander.⁽⁹⁸⁾

In the meantime, Staff Officer Yamashita was negotiating with the Dutch East Indies side at the Isola Hotel in Bandung. The Dutch East Indies side was reluctant to send the gover-

nor-general and the other officials to Kalijati but agreed to it at last.^(41, 75)

In the early afternoon, the governor-general of the Dutch East Indies and his party visited in Lembang the headquarters of Shōji Detachment, which stood ready for combat, paid their respects to Detachment Commander Shōji and headed for Kalijati.⁽⁷⁵⁾

Around 1500, the governor-general of the Dutch East Indies and his party arrived in Kalijati. [3d] Air Division Commander Endō received them, saying: "We have accepted your offer of a cease-fire in conformity with the Japanese code of the warrior. The commander of our ground forces is due to arrive later. After conferring with him, we probably will make demands. If you accept them, we will agree to a cease-fire; otherwise, we will probably bomb Bandung right away with our aircraft, which are ready to be launched, as you can see." Then he let them wait.⁽⁹⁸⁾ After a while at 1600, [Sixteenth] Army Commander Imamura, Chief of Staff Okazaki, and the other staff arrived.⁽³³⁾

At 1800, Army Commander Imamura started the meeting.⁽³³⁾

With Army Commander Imamura at the center, Chief of Staff Okazaki was seated at his right and Air Division Commander Endō at his left; Bandung Area Garrison Commander Major General Pesman, Governor-General Tjarda [van Starkenborgh Stachouwer], Army Department Chief Lieutenant General Ter Poorten and Army Chief of Staff Major General Bakkers were seated from right to left across the table. Staff Officer Okamura Masayuki of [the Army Department of] IGHQ, who had accompanied [the Sixteenth Army] since the convoy left Cam Ranh Bay, [Sixteenth Army Senior] Staff Takashima Tatsuhiko, who was [just] out of hospital on the 7th, and other staff were at the side near Chief of Staff Okazaki, while Miyoshi Shunkichirō, attached to the Military Administration Department (who later became consul), was at the side near Air Division Commander Endō as interpreter together with the interpreter of the Dutch East Indies side.⁽¹³⁾

Army Commander Imamura asked the governor-general: "Do you represent all the forces, officials, and people in the Dutch East Indies in the capacity of governor-general of the Dutch East Indies?" "Yes," the governor-general answered. Army Commander Imamura asked: "In that case, can you, as you sit here, declare surrender or continuation of the war?" The governor-general blanched, looked down, and after a while answered: "No, I cannot." "Why?" Army Commander Imamura asked. The governor-general answered: "As governor-general of the Dutch East Indies, I had until recently the supreme command of the armed forces [of the Dutch East Indies]. But when General Wavell became supreme commander of the allied forces, I was simultaneously deprived of that prerogative by the order of the Queen." [Then] Army Commander Imamura turned to Army Commander Ter Poorten and asked: "How about you?" The latter answered: "I don't have such authority, either." Army Commander Imamura kept on asking: "In that case, what do you do as the chief of the Dutch East Indies Army Department?" [Commander Ter Poorten] inconsistently answered: "I can command the army."⁽¹³⁾

Army Commander Imamura asked the governor-general and his party: "In that case, why on earth did you gentlemen come here?" "We did not come of ourselves; you invited us," the governor-general answered. Army Commander Imamura asked: "If so, for what reason did you offer a cease-fire by sending a bearer of a flag of truce yesterday, the 7th?" "We offered a cease-fire to surrender the Bandung stronghold, because it is unbearable to further expose Bandung to the devastations of the war," the governor-general answered. Army Commander Imamura continued, "Then, what do you think about surrendering the entire Dutch



The Surrender Talks at Kalijati

East Indies?" "That is impossible, because I don't have such authority," the governor-general answered. Army Commander Imamura went on: "Do you mean you can make war but cannot surrender?"

The governor-general answered: "Only the Queen can decide surrender. As we have no means of communication to petition the Queen for permission to surrender, we can do nothing." Army Commander Imamura said, "We are at war with each other at the moment. This is not a place to conduct diplomatic negotiations. We are here only to discuss a capitulation or the continuation of the war. In such a discussion, we cannot deal with you," and sent all non-military persons out of the room.⁽¹³⁾

After the governor-general had left the room, Army Commander Imamura asked Army Commander Ter Poorten: "Do you surrender, even if the governor-general disapproves?" Army Commander Ter Poorten said: "The state of Bandung and vicinity is too pitiful to look at. Bandung has become completely defenseless and the army has as good as disbanded. It is utterly unbearable to force the citizens into the horrors of war any further. I will surrender a considerably wide area of Bandung. Will you accept that?" Army Commander Imamura said: "The surrender of Bandung does not matter to the Japanese Army. Just seizing Bandung is quite easy for the elite troops of the Japanese Army. If surrendering is that impossible for you, it is futile to parley any further. I will make it clear to you once again for the last time. The Japanese Army demands your overall and unconditional surrender. If you cannot accept

it, leave now, and we shall promptly reopen hostilities and resort to force until the Dutch East Indies Army is destroyed. If you should have the intention to surrender totally and unconditionally, you must personally [address] the whole Dutch East Indies Army [through the radio] at the Bandung broadcasting station at 1200 tomorrow, the 9th, and give an order that the army shall stop all resistance after 1200 and that each regional unit shall surrender to the Japanese Army in its area. Our demands shall be read out to you now. You had better memorize them accurately and think them over." [Sixteenth] Army Chief of Staff Okazaki read out the demands. Army Commander Ter Poorten wrote his signature on the [Japanese] demands. It was 1950. Then, Army Commander Imamura continued: "For your reference, I will give you this [list of] our demands regarding the cease-fire. If you decide on an unconditional surrender, come here again, after broadcasting [the order of] cessation of hostilities to the whole Dutch East Indies Army tomorrow, to conclude the arrangements and agreements concerning the surrender." "What time should I come tomorrow?" Army Commander Ter Poorten asked. Army Commander Imamura answered: "We shall meet again at 1520. Just to make sure: if we cannot hear your radio address from Bandung here at 1200, it will mean that the Japanese Army will resume the attacks and the bombardments by the air units will also be resumed. If you understand what I mean, please go back to Bandung for the time being. We will safely show you to the first line of the stronghold."⁽¹³⁾

Thus, the first talks were over. The governor-general and his party took their leave at 2000.

That night, the Shōji Detachment still stayed up all night in Lembang and vicinity in a position of combat-readiness.⁽⁷⁵⁾ The Nasu Detachment ([consisting of] three battalions as the core) rushed and advanced into Cimahi (eight kilometers west-northwest of Bandung) late at night (at 0200 on the 9th). At that time, the Sasaki Battalion, at the rearmost end of the detachment, was still midway between Buitenzorg and Leuwiliang. It was decided that the Nasu Detachment should prepare and be ready to attack Bandung, while gathering its strength in Cimahi.^(59, 61) In the sector of the main force of the 2d Division, there was no prospect [yet] for the reconstruction of the bridge at Krawang, and many motor vehicles remained at a standstill. Particularly, because the Satō Detachment, which had commandeered many motor vehicles (including passenger cars) in Batavia, was at the head of the column, it blocked the road. The detachment remained [stuck] west of Krawang along the Batavia – Krawang road (until 0100 on the 10th).⁽⁶³⁾ The Fukushima Detachment had the 1st Battalion leave Buitenzorg for Batavia by rail at 1300 on the 7th, while the main force followed the battalion by rail [leaving] at 0930 on the 8th. It got off at the Manggarai Station (south of Batavia) at 1130, and advanced in commandeered automobiles and on bicycles along the Batavia–Cibarus (about thirty-five kilometers southeast of Batavia) – Krawang road,⁽⁵⁸⁾ (and arrived in Krawang at 1400 on the 9th).

Broadcast of the Surrender and the Second Meeting

On the 9th, Air Division Commander Endō had intimidation flights conducted from the morning onwards.⁽⁹⁸⁾ The Sixteenth Army command post in Kalijati grew tired of waiting for the advance of the commander of the 2d Division. Before noon, the 2d Division commander arrived [at last]. At 1200, the Dutch East Indies side made the following broadcast:

The Japanese Army succeeded in breaking through into the intermountain area of Bandung. It has taken complete command of the air, which made it impossible for us to put up resistance for long in the intermountain area of Bandung. Therefore, we had no choice but to hold cease-fire negotiations.

The Japanese Army demanded prompt talks with our governor-general and me. In these talks, the Japanese Army commander made the following demands on 8 March:

1. Our overall surrender.
2. A prompt discontinuance of all hostilities.
3. The raising of white flags as a proof of our overall surrender.
4. All forces shall be disarmed and handed over. For this purpose, after disarmament, units in positions shall assemble at clearly visible places, and other units in barracks. Collected weapons and ammunition shall be gathered and put under supervision.
5. The demands stated in Items 1 to 4 shall be completed by 1200 on 9 March.
6. Bodies identified as Japanese military, goods of [Japanese] prisoners of war, and deceased and living Japanese residents shall be promptly handed over.
7. Any kind of destruction is prohibited. For example, the destruction of war materials, weapons, ammunition, roads or traffic structures is forbidden.
8. Communication with foreign countries is prohibited.
9. The operations of the Japanese Army shall be continued.
10. If the above demands are not met, attacks will be immediately resumed. In order to ensure [compliance with] the demands, armed patrol units necessary to maintain public order shall be formed and provided with a certain amount of weapons and ammunition. These patrol units need to be supervised by officers as much as possible. The patrol units shall be made distinguishable by a white armband and a white flag.

After due consideration, I finally had no option but to meet these stipulated demands. I order you to suspend the current hostilities and obey the above-mentioned demands.

When you have received this order, or when you have been contacted by the Japanese Army commander, I ask you to communicate or broadcast [this] through the available radio communication facilities and broadcasting stations, on every whole hour and every thirty minutes starting at 0900 until 1200.

This order applies also to the Navy and all directors of customs.

Major General Pesman, on behalf of the Chief of the Dutch East Indies Army Department

[Editor's note: Item 6 of the above is unclear. One would expect it to read: "*prisoners of war and their goods ...*" The introduction and ending of the broadcast were apparently translated from the Dutch broadcast into Japanese. There are some differences, which I have indicated in italics below:

After due consideration *and with deep regret*, I finally had no option but to meet these stipulated demands *for the sake of land and people [of the Dutch East Indies]*. I order you to suspend the current hostilities, obey the above-mentioned demands, *and contact the highest Japanese commander in or near your sector.*

I ask you, starting at 0900 Java time and thereafter every whole and half hour until 1200, to communicate by means of the available radio, telegraph, or broadcasting facilities the reception of this order and when you have established contact with the highest Japanese commander [in or near your sector].

This order applies also to the Royal Navy, the Dutch East Indies Navy, and all harbor masters.]

At that time, the positions of the [Japanese] units were as follows:⁽⁵³⁾

Shōji Detachment: in Lembang (since the evening of the 7th)

Nasu Detachment: in Cimahi (since 0200 on the 9th)
 2d Division commander: in Kalijati (since before noon of the 9th)
 Satō Detachment: in Krawang (since the night of the 7th)
 Fukushima Detachment: near Cibarusa, about thirty kilometers southwest of Krawang
 (marching toward Krawang)

At 1430 (on the 9th), earlier than demanded, Army Commander (Army Department Chief) Ter Poorten and his party showed up at Kalijati again. The talks were resumed at 1440. It was felt that Lieutenant General Ter Poorten was faithfully implementing the cease-fire process. At 1450, the signing of the instruments of surrender was completed. Army Commander Imamura permitted him to keep wearing his sword. Lieutenant General Ter Poorten left Kalijati accompanied by 2d Division Commander Maruyama.^(33, 34, 98)

Around 1800, Army Commander Imamura left Kalijati, and arrived in Lembang around 2100, where he established his command post.⁽³⁴⁾

Triumphal Entry into Bandung and Citations of Merit

On the early morning of the 9th, the Sixteenth Army had decided on a plan that it would let the 2d Division commander make a triumphal entry into Bandung together with and leading the Shōji Detachment. However, as the 2d Division commander arrived late in Kalijati as previously mentioned, Detachment Commander Shōji entered Bandung by the order of Army Commander Imamura at 1500 on the 9th (the time when the second meeting at Kalijati was over) and began the work of requisitioning.⁽⁷⁵⁾ When the 2d Division commander, who left Kalijati around the same time, arrived in Bandung, the Shōji Detachment had already entered the city of Bandung. On the morning of the 10th, the 2d Division commander told Detachment Commander Shōji that the detachment had been put under the command of the division at 1200 on the 9th, and had the main force of the detachment withdrawn from the city of Bandung, except for one battalion that was left behind.⁽⁷⁵⁾ Then, the 2d Division commander had one battalion of the Nasu Detachment enter [the city] at 1600. Detachment Commander Satō arrived in Lembang at 2400 that day (the 10th), and Detachment Commander Fukushima arrived in Subang at 1700 that day (the 10th).^(31, 53)

[Sixteenth] Army Commander Imamura, who had been positioned in Lembang the night before, left Lembang at 1630 that day (the 10th), entered Bandung at 1700, had a meeting with the 2d Division commander, and then attended dinner at the mess.⁽³⁴⁾ Staff Officer Yano of the Sakaguchi Detachment, whom he had not seen since they had parted in Moji, was [also] present at the mess, and reported on the capture of Davao, Jolo, Balikpapan and Banjarmasin, the landing in Kragan, and the progress of the seizure of Cilacap.⁽⁸⁷⁾

Army Commander Imamura presented the following citation of merit to the Shōji Detachment:⁽¹³⁾

Citation of Merit

The Shōji Unit, the units attached to it and those posted to it

The above units landed in the face of the enemy in Eretan and vicinity in March 1942, several times crushed persistent enemy attacks conducted by air and land, unremittingly pursued the enemy, and seized the Kalijati airfield and the surrounding area as early as noon on the same day, and thus enabled [the army] to gain command of the air. They also cut off the communica-

tion between Batavia and Bandung, broke through a corner of the Bandung stronghold with the support of the Endō Air Unit on the afternoon of the 5th, and thus provided a prime factor in the overall surrender of the enemy. The above operations were courageous, resourceful and extremely opportune; their military merit is outstanding. We present here this citation of merit and proclaim it to the whole army.

21 March, 1942

Imamura Hitoshi, Commander of the Army in the Dutch East Indies Theater

The [Army] Third Air Force Commander Sugawara presented the Endō Air Division with the following citation of merit, and proclaimed its distinguished military service.⁽¹³⁾

Citation of Merit

The 3d Air Division and the units attached to the division

With the Palembang airfield as their base, the 3d Air Division and the units attached to it, under the command of the 3d Air Division commander, destroyed the superior enemy air power in western Java with a small force, overcoming every kind of difficulty. In the landing [operations] of the Sixteenth Army in western Java, they willingly took charge of attacking enemy warships, covered the convoy of the main force of the army and thus facilitated the landing. Upon the seizure of the Kalijati airfield by the Shōji Unit, they fearlessly advanced their base there without missing opportunities, eliminated the persistent enemy counterattacks by air and land, and boldly and actively secured the dominant position all the time by destroying the remaining enemy aircraft and supporting the ground forces in their advance, which completely shattered the enemy's will to put up resistance, and eventually led to the overall surrender of the Dutch East Indies in a very short period. Of course, their military gains were great, but their achievements, which contributed to the operational direction of the entire army, were indeed even greater; their military merit is outstanding. Therefore, we here award this citation of merit.

12 March 1942

[Army] Third Air Force Commander Sugawara Michiō

4. The Operations of the Sakaguchi Detachment

Operation Plan (See Illustration No. 61)

Of the Sakaguchi Detachment, which had seized Banjarmasin on 10 February and whose participation in the Java operation had been approved on the 15th, [the unit consisting of] the 3d Battalion (commander, Lt. Col. Matsumoto Tadasu) as the core and led by Col. Yamamoto Kyōhei, commander of the 146th Infantry Regiment, was positioned at that time in Banjarmasin; the detachment headquarters and [the unit consisting of] the 2d Battalion (commander, Maj. Kanauji Ken'ichi) as the core was in Balikpapan; and [the unit consisting of] the 1st Battalion (commander, Lt. Col. Kume Motozō) was in the Samarinda area, while of its ships the *Ehime-maru* and the *Liverpool-maru* were at Balikpapan, and the others at Palau.⁽⁸⁸⁾

On the 16th, the detachment commander passed down his orders concerning the participation in the Java operation and embarked along with the 1st echelon ([the unit] consisting of the headquarters, the 2d Battalion, the armored vehicle unit and the main force of the field artillery battalion as the core) on the *Ehime-maru* and the *Liverpool-maru*. At 0700 on the 22d, he left Balikpapan to join the convoy of the 48th Division.⁽⁸⁸⁾ [Editor's note: On p. 445 the departure time mentioned was 0800.] The *Teiryū-maru* and the *Nisshō-maru* [*Hiteru-maru*] under the command of [Army] Maj. Takagi Takeo (the commander of the 44th Field Antiaircraft Artillery Battalion), which carried the personnel and goods left in Palau, arrived in Balikpapan at 1100 on the 22d, then departed from the port at 0600 on the 24th, and joined the convoy at 0800 that day.⁽⁸⁸⁾ [Editor's note: There is some confusion about when these ships joined the convoy. Based on the same original sources, the 23d is given as the date on pp. 445–446, while on pp. 449–450 the 24th is given as the date and 1600 as the time.] [The unit, consisting of] the 146th Infantry Regiment (minus the 1st Battalion (minus one company) and the 2d Battalion) and one field artillery battery as the core, under the command of Colonel Yamamoto, was to catch up as the 2d echelon on the *Sagami-maru* and the *Sasako-maru*, which would be brought around after the Bali operation, but because only the *Sasako-maru* came, [the unit] left Banjarmasin on this ship on the 26th, and joined the convoy that day.⁽¹¹⁹⁾ [Editor's note: The *Sagami-maru* had been severely damaged in the Bali operation. See p. 401.] Because the date of the landing on Java was postponed twice, these units could fortunately each time still join the convoy. However, the *Sasako-maru*, which had sustained damage in the Bali operation, was not so fast as to be called a high-speed ship anymore. With her speed decreased to five knots, she could not keep up [with the other ships] during their rapid progress on the 28th and arrived in Kragan one day behind.^(88, 119)

As we have seen, the mission of the Sakaguchi Detachment was to land in Kragan under the direction of the 48th Division commander, charge toward Cilacap through the sector west of [the line connecting] Mt. Lasem and Mt. Lawu, and seize the city. After securing the beachhead, the 48th Division was expected to seize Rembang and Ngawi in the sector of the Sakaguchi Detachment, and take over Blora from the Sakaguchi Detachment.

Located between Kragan and Cilacap were Surakarta, the capital of the principality of Solo, and Yogyakarta, the capital of the principality of Yogya; the area north of Surakarta was an extensive plain with the Solo River flowing northeastward and the Serang River northwestward. Semarang was a strategic port, and Magelang was the garrison city of the central territorial command of the Dutch East Indies.

It seemed highly unlikely that the allied forces would counterattack the landing point in Kragan with their main force. Blora was suitable as a jumping-off base to be used after Kragan. Purwodadi was located at a pivotal point to fan out from between Semarang, Magelang and Surakarta.

Having left the Kume Detachment in Borneo ([to be precise] leaving one infantry company with one gun in Tenggarong and vicinity, one infantry company in Banjarmasin, and the main force in Balikpapan under the command of 1st Battalion Commander Lt. Col. Kume Motozō), the Sakaguchi Detachment was to conduct the Java operation only with the remaining force of slightly more than two battalions.⁽⁸⁸⁾ [To hide its true size,] the detachment hit upon the idea to (1) make its strength for the Java operation look like one division, and for that purpose divide the detachment into three echelons, each with a strength of a little less than three companies, and make each [echelon] look like a regiment; (2) make it a point to charge ahead by motor vehicle; and (3) safely secure the various facilities.⁽⁸⁷⁾ And thus it planned its operations roughly in the following way:⁽⁸⁸⁾

Outline of the Sakaguchi Detachment's [operation to] seize central Java (23 February)

I. Mission

- (1) The Detachment shall land in the area east of Kragan along with the 48th Division, then assemble in Blora and vicinity and in a rapid attack by way of Surakarta, Yogyakarta, Magelang, Wonosobo and the southern foot of Mt. Slamet, seize Cilacap by storm and cut off the escape route of the enemy from the direction of Batavia and Bandung.
- (2) After that, the detachment shall mop up the remaining enemy and clean up the key areas in central Java in concert with the divisions in the adjacent sectors [i.e. the 2d Division in western Java and the 48th Division in eastern Java]. Depending on the situation, it may participate in [the operation to] seize Bandung.

II. Directives

1. First Phase

- (3) The 1st echelon shall depart from Balikpapan and the 2d echelon from Banjarmasin, and each of them shall land in Kragan under the direction of the 48th Division commander.
- (4) After landing in Kragan and vicinity, the detachment shall promptly seize Blora with the unit consisting of the Kanauji Echelon as the core, and have [the echelon] gather information and secure an advance base. The detachment shall promptly advance the detachment command post there. The 48th Division shall seize Rembang and Ngawi with one element.
- (5) After having essentially finished assembling in Blora and vicinity (scheduled for day three after the landing), the main force of the detachment, with the Matsumoto Echelon at the head and followed by the Yamamoto and the Kanauji Echelons in that order, shall rush toward Surakarta along the Blora – Purwodadi – Surakarta road and seize the city. As the seizure of Surakarta will be the first [major] engagement on the main island of Java for the detachment, it shall put particular emphasis on the total elimination of the enemy. For this purpose, it shall keep focused on the area west of the road and carry out the attack with great speed so as to cut off the escape routes of the enemy.
- (6) After seizing Surakarta, the detachment shall have one element (the Kanauji Echelon) swiftly advance in the direction of Yogyakarta, while having the main force destroy the [enemy] position at the northern foot of Mt. Merbabu in a sudden attack from the south without missing an opportunity, then reverse course to seize Yogyakarta, and then at one go seize the [enemy] barracks in Magelang from the south. In this [attack on Magelang], the detachment shall have one element of the Matsumoto Echelon contain the

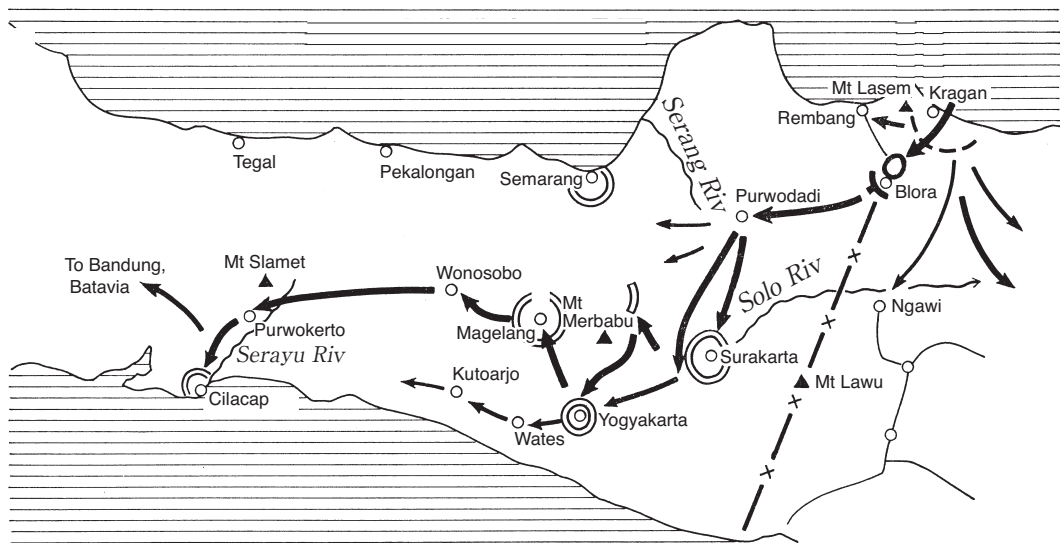


Illustration No. 61 — Overview of the Operation Plan of the Sakaguchi Detachment

enemy in Magelang from the north and the east. Depending on the situation, the detachment shall seize Magelang without attacking the [enemy] position at the northern foot of Mt. Merbabu. Magelang shall be seized on day six after the landing. After seizing Yogyakarta, the detachment shall have one element closely pursue the enemy via Wates toward Kutoarjo.

- (7) After seizing Magelang, the detachment shall leave one element (one infantry company) there, advance via Wonosobo to the southern foot of Mt. Slamet and Purwokerto and vicinity by crossing the Serayu River as far upriver as possible, and expel the enemy from the highland to the north of Cilacap. After seizing the area, the detachment shall seize an opportunity to charge into Cilacap and secure the city. In this [action], [the detachment] shall also seize and secure the enemy battery on the cape south of Cilacap with one element by using [landing] craft. The seizure of Cilacap is scheduled on day ten after the landing at the latest.
 - (8) Disembarked military supplies shall successively be accumulated in Magelang via Surakarta and Yogyakarta.
 - (9) During the operations of this phase, support by one element of the naval air unit is expected.
 - (10) The theater of operations of the detachment is the area west of [the line connecting] Mt. Lasem and Mt. Lawu.
2. Second Phase
- (11) After seizing Cilacap and eliminating the enemy escaping from Bandung and Batavia, the detachment shall promptly shift its main force to Magelang and vicinity, successively seize the key coastal areas of Java, such as Semarang, Pekalongan and Tegal, and mop up [the enemy] there in a timely manner.
 - (12) Depending on the progress of [the operation] of the main force of the [Sixteenth] Army to seize Bandung, [the detachment] shall anticipate sending a powerful unit to that area, and prepare for it.
3. Disposition of forces
- Kanauji Echelon (Commander: Maj. Kanauji Ken'ichi)

2d Battalion (minus one company and one platoon) of the 146th Infantry Regiment
 One regimental gun platoon (minus one squad)
 One antitank gun squad
 Two mortars
 3d Field Artillery Battery (two guns), as the core
 Eight trucks
 Matsumoto Echelon (Commander: Lt. Col. Matsumoto Tadasu)
 3d Battalion (minus one company and one platoon) of the 146th Infantry Regiment
 One regimental gun squad
 One antitank gun platoon (minus one squad)
 Two mortars
 1st Field Artillery Battery (two guns), as the core
 Eight trucks
 Yamamoto Echelon (Commander: Col. Yamamoto Kyōhei)
 Headquarters and three companies of the 146th Infantry Regiment
 Regimental gun company (minus one section)
 Antitank gun company (minus one platoon)
 Field artillery battalion headquarters and one field artillery section, as the core
 Seven trucks
 Unit under the direct command of the headquarters
 Headquarters
 One infantry platoon
 Armored vehicle unit
 Transport company
 Line-of-communication motor transport company, as the core

Implementation of the Operation (*See Illustration No. 62*)

The 1st Echelon [Kanauji], being at the rear of the 48th Division, beat off persistent attacks by allied aircraft from the night of 28 February onwards and entered the anchorage at 0230 on 1 March. It started landing at a point six kilometers southeast of Kragan (to the left of the 48th Division) at 0700.⁽⁸⁸⁾ The Kanauji Echelon departed [from the landing point] without delay and seized Blora at 2000, from where about one battalion of the Dutch East Indies Army had just retreated, and began to gather information. The 2d Echelon (the *Sasako-maru*) entered the anchorage one day behind. The Yamamoto and the Matsumoto Echelon landed at 1230 on the 2d, departed at 2200, and reached Blora before dawn on the 3d. Meanwhile, the detachment commander had landed on the afternoon of the 1st and immediately advanced to Blora. The Kanauji Echelon turned over [the guarding of] Blora to the 48th Division on the 2d, departed [from the town] at 1500, drove away twenty to thirty troops of the Dutch East Indies Army in Ngawen and seized Purwodadi at 0330 on the 3d. The detachment commander decided to advance his force to Purwodadi in succession and assemble them there in preparation for the seizure of Surakarta. After giving orders at 0800 on the 3d in Blora to the Matsumoto and the Yamamoto Echelon to depart [from the town] in that order, he left Blora at 1300 on the same day, and advanced to Purwodadi.^(31, 88)

Detachment Commander [Sakaguchi] concluded in Purwodadi that the allied units in Semarang and Magelang had no intention to take the offensive toward Bugel [Godong] and Salatiga, and decided to attack the allied units in Surakarta and vicinity the next day, the 4th, to capture and eliminate them. At 1500 on the 3d, he ordered to the Kanauji Echelon (to which

an armored vehicle unit was attached up to its arrival in Bugel [Godong] and the 2d Transport Company from there onwards) to quickly advance to Bugel [Godong], and after containing the allied units ([consisting of] about 600 [troops]) in the Semarang area, leave Bugel [Godong] at 0900 on the 4th and advance to the sector east of Klaten via the Juwangi – Karanggede – Boyolali road to cut off the escape route [of the enemy]. [Then,] he gave orders to the Matsumoto Echelon (to which an armored vehicle unit was attached) to leave Purwodadi at 1200 on the 4th to attack the allied unit in Surakarta via the Purwodadi–Surakarta road. Also, he ordered the Yamamoto Echelon to assemble in Purwodadi as swiftly as possible on the next day, the 4th.^(87, 88)

The Kanauji Echelon left Purwodadi at 1850 on the 3d and seized Bugel [Godong] at 1950, driving away about thirty troops of the Dutch East Indies Army. After containing the allied unit in the Semarang area, it left [Bugel/Godong] at 0800 on the 4th to head southwestward. The Matsumoto Echelon left Blora at 0300 on the 4th, reached Purwodadi at 0600, and left the town at 1200, to head south.⁽³¹⁾ At 0900 on the 4th in Purwodadi, Detachment Commander [Sakaguchi] ordered the Yamamoto Echelon to depart after 1400, advance along the Purwodadi – Surakarta road to the west of Surakarta and cut off the escape routes [of the enemy]. He also ordered the echelon to take over the armored vehicle unit from the Matsumoto Echelon after advancing to Kalioso, and to bring the Kanauji Echelon under its command as well after advancing to the west of Surakarta.⁽⁸⁸⁾ The detachment commander was going to leave Purwodadi for Surakarta at 1700.⁽⁸⁸⁾

However, the Matsumoto Echelon's southward advance was fraught with difficulties because the road and bridges along the Purwodadi – Surakarta road had been destroyed at many places. At 1500 (on the 4th) in Purwodadi, Detachment Commander [Sakaguchi] changed his mind and had the main force of the detachment advance at the rear of the Kanauji Echelon [instead of the Matsumoto Echelon] to the west of Surakarta to capture and crush the allied units in the vicinity. [So,] he ordered that the Yamamoto Echelon should advance at the rear of the Kanauji Echelon to the west of Surakarta to cut off the escape route(s) [of the enemy], but that the previous order concerning the command of the Kanauji Echelon should stay as it was, and that the headquarters should head for Boyolali, [also] following the course of the Kanauji Echelon.^(87, 88)

At 1830 on the 4th, the Yamamoto Echelon left Purwodadi.⁽³¹⁾ The Matsumoto Echelon went southward beyond the (two) bridges destroyed by the allied unit. It drove away a Dutch East Indies Army unit consisting of twenty to thirty men accompanied by armored vehicles north of Surakarta at 0055 on the 5th, advanced to the front of an [enemy] position to the north of Surakarta ([guarded by] 200 to 300 troops) at 0135, launched a charge at 0615 on the 5th, and seized Surakarta ([guarded by] a Dutch East Indies Army unit totaling 700 to 800 troops).⁽³¹⁾

The road and bridges on the route of the Kanauji Echelon, which headed southwestward to the west of the Matsumoto Echelon, had been destroyed everywhere, while felled trees also blocked the road. In spite of these difficulties, the echelon advanced and seized Boyolali at 1130 on the 5th, driving away about one hundred troops of a Dutch East Indies Army unit.^(31, 87)

The detachment headquarters, which was following the Kanauji Echelon, spotted a small number of Dutch East Indies troops heading westward from Surakarta in total disarray. The headquarters changed its plan without delay, decided to seize Yogyakarta at a stroke, and

ordered the Kanauji Echelon to charge toward Yogyakarta, taking a short cut. The echelon left Boyolali at 1230 and rushed ahead. The detachment headquarters followed it traveled at a speed of over 100 kilometers per hour and rushed into Yogyakarta at 1730. The charge took place when the garrison commander of the Dutch East Indies Army there was just about to give orders concerning the defense [of the city] to the 700 men under him, all of whom were taken prisoner.^(31, 87)

The effective strength of the allied forces had become clear. This was the opportunity to take the offensive. Detachment Commander Sakaguchi (assisted by Staff Officer Yano) changed the operation plan, decided to closely pursue the enemy by covering the long distance along the coastal road to Cilacap at one go with the main force led by Regimental Commander Yamamoto, while he himself, leading one element, would subdue Magelang, the garrison city of the central territorial command. He passed down the following order:⁽⁸⁸⁾

SAKA [Sakaguchi Detachment] Operation Order A, No. 37

Sakaguchi Detachment Order

Yogyakarta, 2100, 5 March

1. The enemy in Yogyakarta has surrendered unconditionally. The defeated enemy is retreating to the west and the north without restraint.
2. The detachment shall closely pursue the defeated enemy and promptly seize Cilacap and Magelang.
3. Echelon Commander Yamamoto shall hotly pursue the defeated enemy, promptly seize Cilacap, and cut off the escape route of the enemy. He shall take command of the Kanauji Echelon as decided before.

The armored vehicle unit and one platoon of the 259th Independent Motor Transport Company shall be removed [from the echelon]. They shall promptly be sent to Surakarta.

4. The Matsumoto Echelon shall leave Surakarta on the morning of tomorrow, the 6th, and promptly seize Magelang by way of Yogyakarta, while hotly pursuing the enemy.

The armored vehicle unit and one platoon of the 259th Independent Motor Transport Company shall be attached to the echelon at Surakarta.

5. – 7. (Omitted by the author.)
8. I am in Yogyakarta. I will advance toward Surakarta at 2300 today.

Detachment Commander Sakaguchi Shizuo

It was decided to let only a captain, a noncommissioned officer and one private deal with the 700 prisoners in Yogyakarta.⁽⁸⁷⁾ Detachment commander [Sakaguchi] waited for Regimental Commander Yamamoto to report, but since the latter did not show up, the detachment commander left Yogyakarta at 2300 as scheduled and made a U-turn to Surakarta⁽⁸⁷⁾ in order to give instructions concerning Surakarta after its seizure as well as to send the Matsumoto Echelon to Magelang. He arrived in Surakarta after a long drive at night to find the Yamamoto Echelon busy preparing in their mess tins two meals, one for that evening and the other for the next day. The echelon explained that it had acted as previously ordered and that it had arrived in Surakarta at 1730.⁽⁸⁷⁾ The detachment commander ordered [the echelon] to immediately start [for Cilacap]. The Yamamoto Echelon left Surakarta in the middle of the night (at 0100 on the 6th).⁽³¹⁾

The Yamamoto Echelon reached Yogyakarta at 0600 on the 6th, and left there without a break to follow the Kanauji Echelon.

[The echelon] charged ahead while driving away about one hundred troops of a Dutch East Indies Army unit in Purworejo at 1230, about one hundred in Kebumen at 1620, and another one hundred in Gombong, and advanced into Maos in the evening, where it stopped because the bridge [there] had been destroyed. On that day, the 6th, the distances that the Kanauji and the Yamamoto Echelon covered were respectively about 170 kilometers and about 220 kilometers. The Kanauji Echelon had traveled about one hundred kilometers on average day in and day out since the landing. The drivers alternately stood and sat behind the wheel and some crashed their cars on a straight road. It was because driving without rest or sleep day after day dazed their eyes, and when the car ahead suddenly loomed straight in front, they cut the steering wheel in panic [and crashed]. Many drivers got sweat rashes because they gripped their steering wheels too tightly to wipe off their sweat. In that way, on that evening (the 6th) they reached the Serayu River, where Cilacap was seen at a calling distance. Unfortunately, the bridge had been destroyed, which meant that they had to set about preparing to cross the river.^(31, 87)

The Matsumoto Echelon, which was to head for Magelang, left Surakarta that morning (of the 6th), and via Yogyakarta advanced to the front of the [enemy] position in Magelang in the evening. Accompanied by the detachment headquarters, [the echelon] started its attack at 1715, against which an allied unit fought back with fierce gunfire. The Matsumoto Echelon had prepared itself for a hard battle all the more because Magelang was a garrison town. [However,] before long, the gunfire of the allied unit ceased abruptly. From a precedent at Tarakan, Staff Officer Yano judged that it meant surrender, and headed for the town of Magelang with three men in a single captured armored vehicle. They kept advancing in spite of a heavy squall, which struck them just then, and all of a sudden they came upon an envoy of the garrison army (a lieutenant colonel), who was approaching them holding a white flag. The lieutenant colonel asked them to stop the attack because the garrison army was surrendering. They put him in the armored car and entered Magelang. Before long, [Infantry] Group Commander Sakaguchi also arrived. Having been told that the troops of the Japanese Army sent to this front were just one element and that the main force was advancing toward Semarang and Ambarawa, the garrison commander said that he would see to it that the Dutch East Indies Army in those areas would also surrender. In reality, there were no [Japanese] troops heading for those areas. Without delay, the detachment commander hurriedly sent one platoon to those areas along with an officer of the Dutch East Indies Army. In this way, [the detachment commander] was able to have within that night 1,700 officers and men including Colonel Fleischer of the Dutch East Indies Army in the city of Magelang, 600 in Semarang, 200 in Salatiga, 160 in Ambarawa, and 70 in Temanggung surrender.^(31, 87) At 1900, the detachment commander gave the following order:⁽⁸⁸⁾

SAKA [Sakaguchi Detachment] Operation Order A, No. 38

Sakaguchi Detachment Order

Magelang, 1900, 6 March

1. The enemy has surrendered unconditionally.
2. The detachment shall push all the harder to capture [the remaining areas].
3. The Matsumoto Echelon shall park at the car assembly point at the north end of Magelang and after finishing refitting the vehicles of the unit, at one go secure the bridge in Banjarnegara.
4. I shall advance at the rear of the Matsumoto Echelon.

At daybreak (on the morning of the 7th), the Matsumoto Echelon resumed its rapid advance. It drove away fifty troops of a Dutch East Indies Army unit in Wonosobo, then attacked 160 troops in the evening, and entered Banjarnegara at night. It left the town on the morning of the next day, the 8th, passed through Bukateja, where the bridge had been destroyed, at 1045, and reached Purbalingga at 1215. The bridge [there] had been destroyed [as well]. There the detachment commander learned that [his detachment] had successfully seized Cilacap at 1240 on that day, the 8th.^(31, 87)

On the evening of the 6th, the Kanauji Echelon, which had advanced to Maos at the bank of the Serayu River, defeated some 150 troops of a Dutch East Indies Army unit equipped with armored vehicles, and reconnoitered the area of Maos along the upper and the lower reaches of the Serayu River, [only] to find that all the bridges had been destroyed. [Consequently,] it made preparations to cross the river from the evening of the 6th to the evening of the 7th, crossed the river at 2000 on the 7th, and charged into Cilacap at 0340 on the 8th. The Yamamoto Echelon, which had followed the above echelon, also arrived in Cilacap at 1500 on the same day (the 8th).⁽⁸⁷⁾

In the evening (the evening of the 8th), Detachment Commander [Sakaguchi] issued the following order in Purbalingga:⁽⁸⁸⁾

SAKA [Sakaguchi Detachment] Operation Order A, No. 39

Sakaguchi Detachment Order

Purbalingga, 1710, 8 March

1. The Yamamoto Echelon has seized Cilacap at 1240 today, the 8th. It seems that the enemy has destroyed all bridges and retreated to the west.
2. The detachment shall closely pursue the enemy.
3. The Yamamoto Echelon (to which the Kanauji Echelon is attached) shall promptly seize Banjar (seventy kilometers northwest of Cilacap) and vicinity to eliminate the enemy retreating from the Bandung area, while leaving in Cilacap a minimal element necessary to maintain the public order there.
4. I am in Purbalingga and will advance toward Purwokerto.

On having finished crossing the river in Purbalingga, the Matsumoto Echelon left the town at 1950 (on the 8th) and advanced to Purwokerto at 2300. Bridges [there] had also been destroyed.^(31, 87) The detachment commander caught up with the echelon and issued the following order there at noon on the 9th:⁽⁸⁸⁾

SAKA [Sakaguchi Detachment] Operation Order A, No. 40

Sakaguchi Detachment Order

Purwokerto, 1200, 9 March

1. It seems that the enemy has practically lost its fighting spirit and is escaping to the west.
2. The detachment shall cut off the escape routes of the enemy with one element and eliminate the defeated enemy.
3. The Matsumoto Echelon shall be positioned in Kranggan and vicinity and catch and destroy the enemy retreating from the direction of Batavia. The armored vehicle unit shall be put under my direct control from now on.
4. – 5. (Omitted by the author.)
6. I will leave Purwokerto at 1300 and go to Cilacap.

However, one hour later (at 1300), an envoy of Major General Cox came from Wangon to the Yamamoto Echelon and offered to surrender.^(31, 87)

As we have seen, the surrender [of the Dutch East Indies Army] was broadcast from Bandung at 1200 on that day. Echelon Commander Yamamoto instructed the envoy to go to the detachment headquarters.^{(31,}

⁸⁷⁾ Detachment Commander Sakaguchi issued the following order:⁽⁸⁸⁾

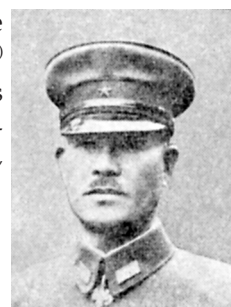
SAKA [Sakaguchi Detachment] Operation Order A, No. 41

Sakaguchi Detachment Order

Purwokerto, 2000, 9 March

1. The enemy commander of central Java has offered to surrender.
2. The detachment shall maintain its readiness to attack in order to have the upper hand when disarming the enemy.
3. The Matsumoto Echelon shall assemble its main force in Ajibarang and vicinity and take charge of maintaining public order around there, while holding one element ready to attack the enemy at the bridge and its vicinity south of Ajibarang.
4. I am in Purwokerto.

Detachment Commander Sakaguchi Shizuo



56th Mixed Infantry
Group Commander
Maj. Gen. Sakaguchi
Shizuo

At 1100 on the 10th, Detachment Commander [Sakaguchi] met Major General Cox at the residence of the Dutch East Indies Resident in Purwokerto and accepted his surrender.^(31, 87) At 1200, the detachment commander passed down [the detachment] Operation Order A, No. 42 in Purwokerto. He ordered the Yamamoto Echelon (including the Kanauji Echelon) to promptly advance to Tasikmalaya and vicinity to monitor the disarmament. He [further] ordered the Matsumoto Echelon to assemble its main force in Ajibarang and vicinity and have it monitor the disarmament of the Dutch East Indies Army units north of Wangon (not included), while assigning one element to maintain the public order in the Tegal and Pekalongan area.⁽⁸⁸⁾ In Wangon and vicinity, 2,000 troops under Major General Cox surrendered.⁽³¹⁾

Although the detachment commander remained positioned in Purwokerto, Staff Officer Yano immediately departed after the order was passed down and presented himself at the mess dinner (already described) with [Sixteenth] Army Commander Imamura and others that night (the night of the 10th) in Bandung.⁽⁸⁷⁾ While everyone gave him an incredulous look, Staff Officer Yano reported that [the Sakaguchi Detachment] had subdued all the strategically important places from Semarang to Tegal on the north coast, from the south of Surakarta to the west of Cilacap on the south coast, and from Blora westward to Tasikmalaya in the central part.⁽⁸⁷⁾

[Sixteenth] Army Commander Imamura presented the following citation of merit to the Sakaguchi Detachment, and proclaimed its distinguished military service to the whole army.⁽¹³⁾

Citation of Merit

The Sakaguchi [Infantry] Group and the units attached to it
Going ahead of the army, the above expeditionary force drove deep into enemy territory and successively fought battles in the Philippine Islands and Dutch Borneo. Five times they carried out landings in the face of the enemy, fought hard, defeated a stubborn enemy and seized strate-



Illustration No. 62 — The Operation of the Sakaguchi Detachment

gic points without missing opportunities, thereby turning the entire invasion operation of the East Indies to our favor.

In the operations of the main force of the [Sixteenth] Army against Java, the group landed in Kragan and vicinity and with great speed broke through all places [of resistance] in central Java. After the landing, they dashed forward to seize Cilacap in less than a week and cut off the escape route of the entire enemy army in Java, which dealt the enemy a fatal blow, and [thus] critically contributed to the unconditional surrender of the enemy. Their military merit is truly outstanding. We present here this citation of merit and proclaim it to the whole army.

21 March, 1942

Imamura Hitoshi, Commander in Chief of the Army in the Dutch East Indies Theater

Of the 16th Army only the Sakaguchi Detachment and the Shōji Detachment received a citation of merit in the Java invasion operation.

5. The Operations of the 48th Division

Terrain and Operation Plan (*See Illustration No. 63*)

In eastern Java, the Serang River runs from Surakarta to the northeast of Semarang and the Solo River flows into the Madura Strait via Ngawi, Cepu, Bojonegoro and Babad. To the southeast of the Solo River, the Brantas River flows through Mojokerto via Kediri and Kertosono; its lower part branches into the Kalimas River, which flows [into the sea] at Surabaya, and the Porong River, which flows through Porong. Paddy fields cover the areas along these rivers, but the areas between the north coast and the Solo River and those between the Solo River and the Brantas River, and between [the Solo River and] the Widas River are hilly, while high conical mountains range from east to west in the entire area south of the Widas and the Brantas River. Many [drainage and irrigation] channels and ditches run through the coastal areas that face the Madura Strait and the Madura Sea.

As for the situation of the enemy, it had been known since before the opening of hostilities that there were batteries, pillbox positions and strongholds with three lines of barbed-wire entanglements at the military port of Surabaya (in the areas of Gresik, Surabaya, and Piring); that the eastern territorial (divisional) headquarters [of the Dutch East Indies Army] was located in Malang; that in Porong, which is situated in between [Surabaya and Malang], there was a V-shaped position (a position open at the front from where the enemy attack is expected and designed to squeeze and trap the enemy within its narrowing wings, resting on natural obstacles) with two-storied pillboxes and barbed-wire entanglements; that there was a position with batteries in Semarang as well; and that there were barracks in Magelang, etc. After the opening of the hostilities, it was also learned that a central territorial (divisional) command was newly established in Magelang. The information on the disposition of the allied forces was rather diverse, but for the area from Magelang to the east it may be roughly [summarized] as follows:⁽²³⁾

Magelang: a divisional headquarters and [a unit consisting of] two battalions as the core

Semarang: [a unit consisting of] one battalion as the core

Surakarta: [a unit consisting of] half a battalion as the core

Surabaya (including the island of Madura): [a unit consisting of] five battalions as the core

Pasuruan and Porong: [a unit consisting of] two battalions as the core

Malang: a divisional headquarters and [a unit consisting of] three battalions as the core

As we have seen, the initial operation plan of IGHQ, the Southern Army and the Sixteenth Army was that [a force consisting of] the 2d Division and three battalions of the 38th Division as the core should capture western Java, the 48th Division eastern Java, while the South Seas Detachment should land in Cirebon and seize Cilacap. At that time, the sector which the 48th Division was supposed to capture was roughly determined as the area from Semarang and Magelang to the east, while its landing points were set at three points between Kragan and vicinity and Semarang.⁽⁸⁰⁾ As a matter of course, its main target was Surabaya.

After the decision to give up the employment of the South Seas Detachment, the Sixteenth Army's [revised] operation plan reduced the number of landing points by one point to two. The plan had [the division] seize Semarang and Magelang in the west, and seize Surabaya

in the east from the direction of the coastal road and via the road along the Solo River valley (in other words, from the northwest), while Cilacap was to be seized at an appropriate time.⁽⁸⁰⁾ It was a plan in which a unit under the command of Col. Imai Kazufumi, commander of the 1st Taiwan Infantry Regiment, should land at the Serang River valley in six transport ships and head for Semarang and Magelang, while [a unit on] nineteen transport ships directly led by Divisional Commander Lt. Gen. Tsuchihashi Yūitsu, should disembark at Kragan and head for Surabaya along the coast as well as the road along the Solo River valley.⁽⁹⁶⁾ (See the previously described arrangement between the Sixteenth Army and the Third Fleet [p. 226 ff.].) Apart from this, it was planned to have a unit [consisting of] one battalion as the core land on Bali using two high-speed ships.⁽⁸⁰⁾

Against this Sixteenth Army plan, the 48th Division offered its opinion and at two points the plan was revised.

The first point was that in view of the bitter precedent in the landing [operation] on northern Luzon, the landing points were reduced to [just] one point, which enabled a better guard against submarines. Along the whole northern coast [of Java], there were shoreline positions and obstacles, but fortunately these were not spotted along the coast of Kragan. Moreover, with a sandy shoal (of fifteen meters deep) stretching far into the sea, the coast had the advantage [of providing protection] against attacks on the anchorage by [enemy] submarines. It was decided to set the landing point of the 48th Division only at Kragan and have the landing point covered from the air by three layers of naval fighter planes.⁽⁸⁰⁾

The second point was to fully demonstrate the mobile strength [of the division] by concentrating its strength on the allied forces in one area and defeat them, while reducing the allied forces in other areas to passivity. As mentioned previously, the division had originally been organized as a motorized division (that is, it had motor vehicles sufficient for one third of the personnel of its infantry regiments). After the capture of Manila, [the division had commandeered so many motor vehicles that] the entire division could be transported all at the same time by motor vehicles. The division commander revised the plan in such a way that after the landing in Kragan, he would have [the division] seize the lower reaches of the Serang River, Cepu (oil fields and bridges), and Bojonegoro (bridges), and in particular make a demonstration of heading southwestward. As the landing progressed, he would have the main force charge toward the Widas River and the Brantas River, defeat the allied units, and seize Porong. Having cut the line of communication between Surabaya and Malang, he would then attack the Surabaya stronghold. Prior to the attack on the Surabaya stronghold, he would have the unit that had advanced to the lower reaches of the Serang River at the beginning [of the operation] seize Magelang, while the attack on Cilacap would be conducted depending on the situation. The order that the Sixteenth Army had given to the 48th Division on 24 January was in outline: (1) [the division] should have a unit [consisting of] one battalion as the core land in Bali no later than day I – 2; (2) the division should land at Kragan on day I, promptly secure the crossing points over the Solo River and the oil resources in Cepu with one element, and then defeat the enemy to promptly seize Surabaya, and have a powerful element dash to Cilacap at a favorable opportunity to cut off the escape route of the enemy; (3) after that, the division should mop up the enemy in eastern Java in concert with the main force of the [Sixteenth] Army. (See the previous description. [pp. 236–237]) The landing plan, for which the 48th Division made arrangements with the 4th Destroyer Squadron on 4 February, was as follows (See the previous description. [pp. 237–240]):

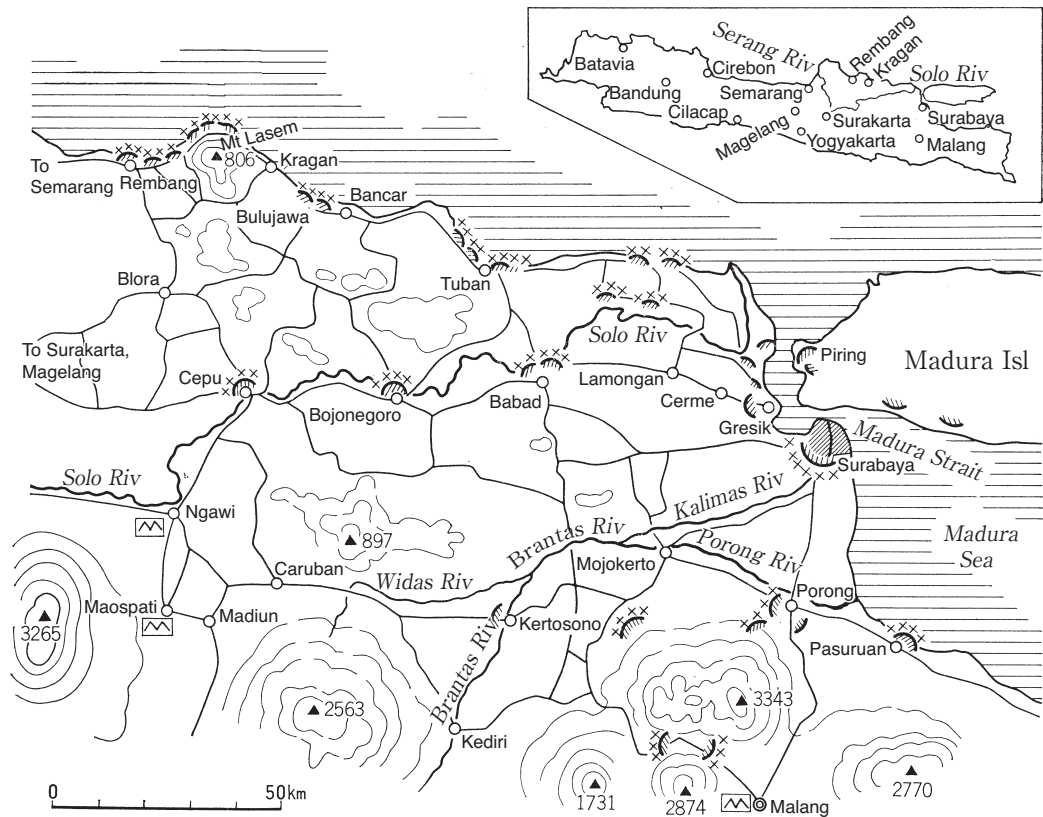


Illustration No. 63 — The Terrain and the Known Position of the Enemy in Eastern Java

Imai Unit ([consisting of] two infantry battalions and one mountain artillery battalion as the core under the command of the 1st Taiwan Infantry Regiment commander): shall come ashore in Sector B in Kragan and advance to Serang (Magelang). [Editor's note: Possibly a misreading for Sedan and Semarang. See p. 238.]

Kitamura Unit (48th Reconnaissance Regiment): shall come ashore at the same landing point as the above and advance to Bojonegoro.

Abe Unit ([consisting of] three infantry battalions, two tank squadrons and two mountain artillery battalions as the core, under the command of the infantry group commander): shall come ashore in Sector A in Kragan and advance to Ponjūru. [Editor's note: The map on p. 575 in the Japanese edition has a "Ponjūru" and a "Ponjoru," both of which are unidentifiable. The most likely candidates are "Bulujawa," "Boncong" and "Bancar." The latter might locally be pronounced as "Boncor."]

Tanaka Unit ([consisting of] two infantry battalions and one mountain artillery battalion as the core under the command of the 2d Taiwan Infantry Regiment commander): shall come ashore at the same landing point as the above and advance to Cepu.

In mid February, it was decided that the Sakaguchi Detachment would [also] land in Kragan and head for Cilacap. It was further decided that the Imai Unit and the Abe Unit ([consisting of] the 47th Infantry Regiment as its core) should come ashore respectively as the right wing

unit and the left wing unit, and secure a beachhead that stretched from Mt. Lasem to a line eight kilometers south of Kragan to cover the landing. The Imai Unit should further seize Rembang and the Kanauji Battalion of the Sakaguchi Detachment should rush beyond the beachhead to seize Blora ([the guarding of] which would later be taken over by the Imai Unit), while the Tanaka Unit should rush beyond the beachhead to seize Cepu and Ngawi. The Kitamura Unit should rush beyond the beachhead to seize Bojonegoro (and seize Tuban with one element). After the landing of the Matsumoto and the Yamamoto Echelon, the Sakaguchi Detachment should then leave Blora for Cilacap, whereas in progress with the landing, the 48th Division should head for the area east of the Brantas River with the Abe Unit as the 1st echelon, the Tanaka Unit as the 2d, and the Imai Unit as the 3d echelon, while having the Kitamura Unit head eastward from Bojonegoro to Surabaya to contain the allied units, and so gain the upper hand for the decisive battle of the division that was expected to occur on the bank of the Brantas River.^(79, 80)

Operational Preparations

As mentioned previously, the 48th Division had been preparing for the Malaya [invasion] operation, when in August 1941 the [operation] plan was changed in such a way that it would join the Philippines and Java [invasion] operations instead. It then mainly focused on the preparations for the operation against the Philippines. However, right after the departure of the units that were to land in Aparri and Vigan, it turned out that a member of the sultan's family of the Principality of Yogyakarta was teaching at Gaoxiong Commercial School in Taiwan, and the main force of the division took him along to the Philippines. This helped [the division] to know the details [of the situation] in eastern Java.⁽⁸⁰⁾ Just before the seizure of Manila, Divisional Commander Tsuchihashi learned that it had been decided to move up the Java operation and that IGHQ and the Southern Army considered that the division's assignment in the Philippines had been completed. However, Division Commander Tsuchihashi could not allow himself to overlook the U.S.-Filipino Army's retreat into Bataan and decided to head for Bataan for a limited period of one week to ten days at most. On 8 January, the division turned over the battle front of Bataan to the 65th Brigade, assembled in the suburbs of Manila, and started the preparations for the Java operation. When Vice Chief of Staff Aoki of the Southern Army had visited [the division] before, it had particularly requested heavy artillery units (at least one 10-cm. gun and one 15-cm. howitzer battalion each) to be assigned [to the division] for the attack on the Surabaya stronghold. However, the Southern Army had informally decided not to transfer [heavy artillery units] from the Fourteenth Army, which was to capture Bataan and Corregidor, but to transfer instead units which belonged to the Twenty-fifth Army, and which were to be sent later. As a result, no heavy artillery units were included in the twenty-one units [on the list] to be transferred by the order of the Southern Army on 15 January, although tanks (the 4th Regiment) were included.^(23, 24) Lieutenant General Tsuchihashi wired to the chief of staff of the Southern Army, saying, "I'm not complaining, but I heard that Surabaya has a stronghold, while my corps is equipped only with mountain guns. When we fire at the enemy stronghold and the shells bounce back with a clang, who will take responsibility? I would like to ask you a favor to at least allocate [a unit of] 15-cm. howitzers." Only one 15-cm. howitzer battery of the 17th Field Heavy Artillery

Regiment was sent from Lüshun [Port Arthur] and joined the division at Lingayen just before embarkation.⁽⁷⁹⁾

The main preparation for the [Java] operation done in Manila was the maintenance of the motor vehicles. As mentioned previously, the division had equipped itself so that the entire division could move all together in motor vehicles.⁽⁸⁰⁾ Col. Yanagi Isamu, the 47th Infantry Regiment commander, procured about 3,000 pairs of pliers in Manila to demolish the three lines of barbed-wire entanglements of the Surabaya stronghold.⁽⁸⁴⁾

As we have seen, [the division commander] made arrangements with the 4th Destroyer Squadron commander in Manila on 4 February and embarked on 5 February. On the 7th, the Kanemura Detachment departed from Lingayen [for Bali], and the convoy of the main force (thirty-nine ships) left the gulf on the 8th, then made supplementary preparations for the operation in Jolo, and sailed southward after making a change in its operation plan to include the Sakaguchi Detachment's participation [in the operation].⁽⁷⁹⁾

Landing, and Seizure of Rembang and the Bridges over the Solo River

(See Illustration No. 64)

The convoy, which had reversed course from a point about seventy kilometers north of Kragan at 2040 on the 27th, sailed northward all through the night, turned eastward around 0500 on the 28th, and resumed sailing southward around 0800 on the same day. Despite allied planes approaching it that evening, it safely sailed southward after that. From around 0030 on 1 March, Mt. Lasem was distantly visible in the dim moonlight of an almost full moon. The *Arizona-maru* with the division commander aboard dropped anchor at 0130 and [the convoy] completed entering the anchorage at 0235. Although [the convoy] was attacked several times from around 0300 and sustained a loss of one ship sunk, one stranded, sixty-two men killed and 210 wounded, the right and left wing units succeeded in landing respectively at 0345 and 0400. [Editor's note: The description on p. 458 differs.] The allied unit facing them consisted of about one Dutch East Indies Army company with a small number of armored vehicles and sidecars; it retreated after only firing randomly some shells from a trench mortar.^(31, 79, 119)

The first landing units of the right wing unit (the 1st Taiwan Infantry Regiment led by Col. Imai Kazufumi) and the left wing unit (the 47th Infantry Regiment (with Col. Yanagi Isamu as regimental commander) led by Maj. Gen. Abe Kōichi, commander of the 48th Infantry Group) immediately advanced to the line connecting Mt. Lasem, Sedan and Ponjūru [? Bancar] (about eight kilometers from the landing point in Kragan), and took positions to cover the landing. On landing, the main force of the Imai Unit (the second and the subsequent landing units) made preparations for charging toward Rembang, the Tanaka Regiment (the 2d Taiwan Infantry Regiment led by Col. Tanaka Tōru) for charging toward Cepu, the Kitamura Unit (the 48th Reconnaissance Regiment led by Lt. Col. Kitamura Kurō) for charging toward Bojonegoro (one element toward Tuban), and the Kanauji Echelon of the Sakaguchi Detachment for charging toward Blora. When leaving the mother ship in a large motorized [landing] craft at 0730, the division commander was strafed by four or five allied planes, but safely came ashore in Kragan at 0830. The Kanauji Echelon (which had started landing at 0700) seized Blora at 2000, and the Tanaka Unit and the Kitamura Unit left respectively for Cepu and Bojonegoro (one element of the latter for Tuban) around 1500 and around 1700.

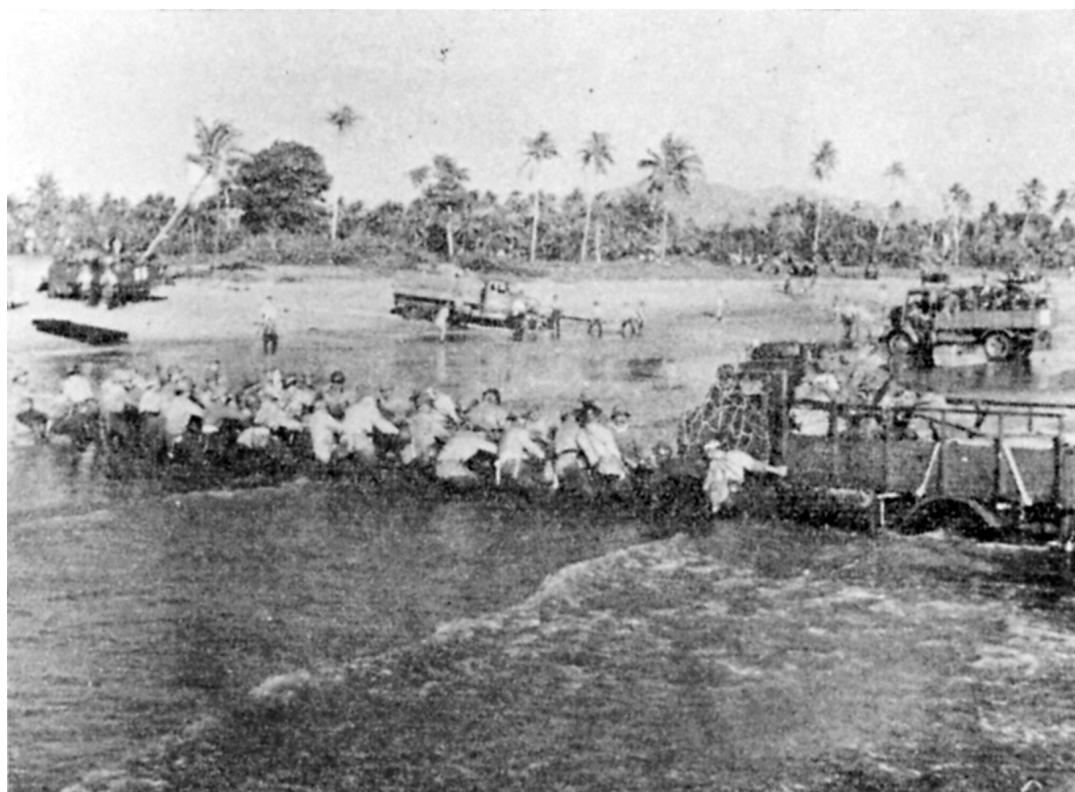
The main force of the Imai Unit departed around 1900 and headed for Rembang, separating into a group that went along the road north and a group that went along the road south of Mt. Lasem. The 2d Battalion [of the Imai Unit], which had taken the coastal road, attacked an allied unit at 2330 northwest of Mt. Lasem. Thus, by midnight on the first day of landing, the 48th Division (including the Sakaguchi Detachment) had established a foothold of about seventy to eighty kilometers wide and about forty kilometers deep, and continued expanding it. Detachment Commander Sakaguchi bid farewell to the division commander and left for Blora.^(31, 79, 119)



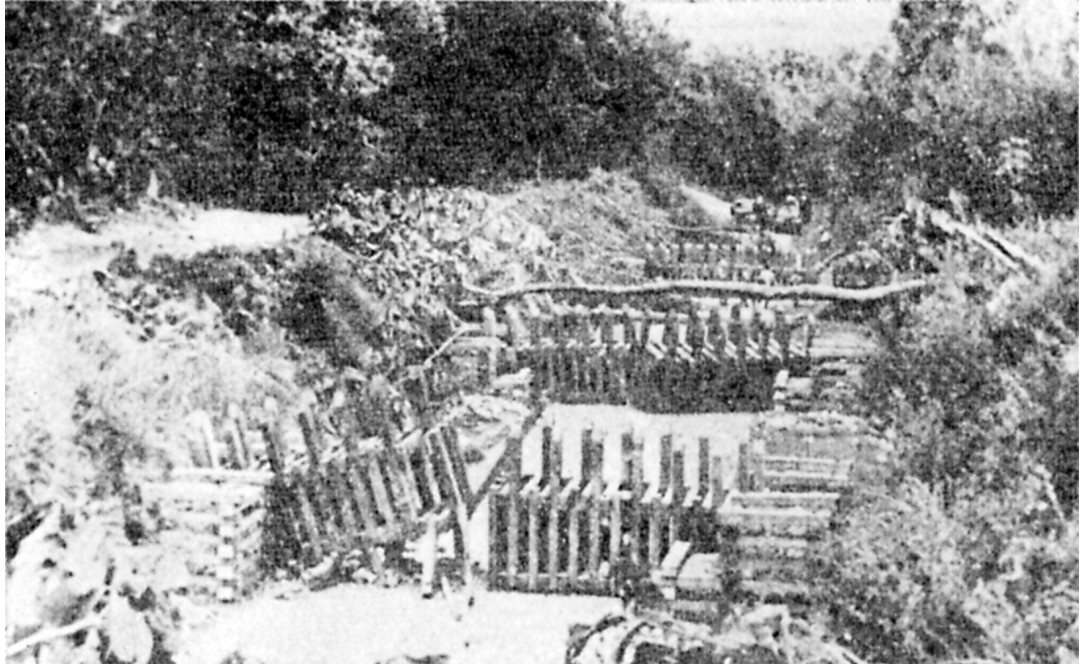
48th Reconnaissance
Regiment Commander,
Lt. Col. Kitamura Kuro

The landing point was really favorable; the condition of the coast was perfect, and about 700 indigenous men helped with the disembarkation from just after [the start of] the landing.⁽²⁷⁾

On 2 March, the Imai Unit charged into Rembang at 0340. The advance of the Tanaka Unit was delayed because the road north of Cepu was barricaded with trees over a long distance, but the unit advanced into Cepu at 1530, drove away a small unit of the Dutch East Indies Army on the south bank of the Solo River, and seized the whole area at 1800. The bridges in Cepu had been destroyed. The Kitamura Unit finally managed to get to the north bank [of the Solo River] in Bojonegoro in the evening, due to the loss of a number of its officers at the time of landing, which was followed by a series of motor vehicle trouble. The Abe Unit (Yanagi Unit) successively shifted to the assembling of its strength. The *Sasako-maru*, which



The Landing in Kragan



Barricades on the Blora – Cepu road

had enjoyed fame as a high-speed ship, was [no longer] able to sail at a speed faster than five knots due to the damage she sustained in the Bali operation. She entered the anchorage on that day and started the disembarkation of the Yamamoto and the Matsumoto Echelons. In the evening, Division Commander Tsuchihashi ordered the Imai Unit and the Abe Unit to send their advance units respectively to Blora and the three-forked junction east of the town for the purpose of their subsequent advance. However, soon after that, he learned that the bridges over the Solo River in Cepu, Bojonegoro and Babad were all destroyed, and gave orders to the 48th Engineer Regiment and the 3d Independent Engineer Regiment to rapidly advance to bridge the river.^(31, 79, 84, 88)

Meeting Engagements at the Banks of the Brantas River

(See Illustrations No. 65 and No. 66)

The next day, the 3d [of March], was the [Japanese] Girl's Festival [and seasonally cold in Japan], but it was hot. A report came from the Kitamura Unit, saying: "Today the 3d at 0600, we have crossed the Solo River and seized Bojonegoro, from where a Dutch East Indies Army unit had retreated last night." On that day, the Imai Unit first of all dispatched its bicycle unit from Rembang to Blora. The Abe Unit assembled its force and made preparations for advancing southward. Division Commander [Tsuchihashi] left Kragan at 1600, and advanced to Cepu at 1910. He had departed as soon as he had heard that the barricades on the road to Cepu had been cleared. The road had been barricaded in places for several hundred meters with felled teak trees brought from the large forests, which made [the divisional commander] think of the trouble of the removal work. The oil wells in Cepu were burning and the oil refinery had also been destroyed.^(31, 79)

On the next day, the 4th, the division commander waited for the bridging in Cepu to be completed and the assembly of his units. The division commander's plan was to [first] carry out at one go after the landing a rapid advance up to the seizure of Rembang and the crossing points of the Solo River (including the oil fields in Cepu), then have his force assemble on the line of the Solo River, and on completion of the assembling, launch with lightning speed an all-out war of movement. On that day (the 4th), the Abe Unit started its advance at 0600 and had [already] arrived in Cepu at 1100. The Imai Unit (other than those who had departed by bicycle the day before) also left Rembang at 0900 on that day (the 4th) in motor vehicles and caught up with the rear of the Abe Unit via Blora. The bridging [of the Solo River] in Cepu was all they had been waiting for. It was to be completed by noon on that day (the 4th) but was delayed because part of the bridge had been carried away by the river swollen with the squall of the previous night and had to be rebuilt. Receiving a report in the middle of the night that "the bridging has been completed at 2100 and the crossing of the river has started," the divisional commander felt finally relieved and took a nap.^(31, 79)



48th Infantry Group
Commander Maj. Gen.
Abe Kōichi

On the next day, the 5th, Divisional Commander Tsuchihashi waited for a report on the situation, while going over his operational directives for the meeting engagements expected to take place at the banks of the Brantas River that day, the 5th. The Abe Unit was supposed to have started its advance in the dead of night and be charging toward the front of the Porong stronghold, while the Kitamura Unit (reconnaissance regiment) was supposed to have advanced from Bojonegoro toward Surabaya and contained the allied units. The division commander himself planned to advance at the head of the Tanaka Unit (the 2d echelon), while having the Imai Unit (the 3d echelon) depart following the Tanaka Unit. He also planned to have the Tanaka Unit on its way mop up [the enemy in] Ngawi and Maospati with one element. He considered that it was highly probable that a meeting engagement would take place at the banks of the Brantas River, particularly in the area somewhere between Kertosono and Mojokerto. As the bridge at Kediri south of Kertosono would be especially important if [his units] should engage the enemy at the Brantas River, the divisional commander had instructed Unit Commander Abe and the staff officer up front to preemptively seize [the bridge].⁽⁷⁹⁾

When the divisional commander was thinking about winning a decisive victory in a field battle on that day, the 5th, a staff officer came to him and reported: "The leading echelon, the Abe Unit, has for the most part completed crossing the river around 0600 in spite of some confusion. But when the 4th Tank Regiment at the tail of the Abe Unit crossed the bridge, it began to move a medium-sized U.S. tank that had been captured in the Philippines onto the bridge ignoring the bridge monitoring squad's calls to stop, as a result part of the bridge was destroyed." Divisional Commander Tsuchihashi lost his temper, saying, "What on earth is it that no staff officers kept an eye on it?" He stamped with frustration, but there was no chance to temporarily fix it in time [for the expected meeting engagement]. Having no choice, he decided to have pontoon rafts prepared to paddle across the river. It was not until 1300 that the divisional commander, who had planned to closely follow in the rear of the Abe Unit, managed to cross the Solo River. He judged that the Abe Unit should [now] be in the middle of a fierce battle.⁽⁷⁹⁾

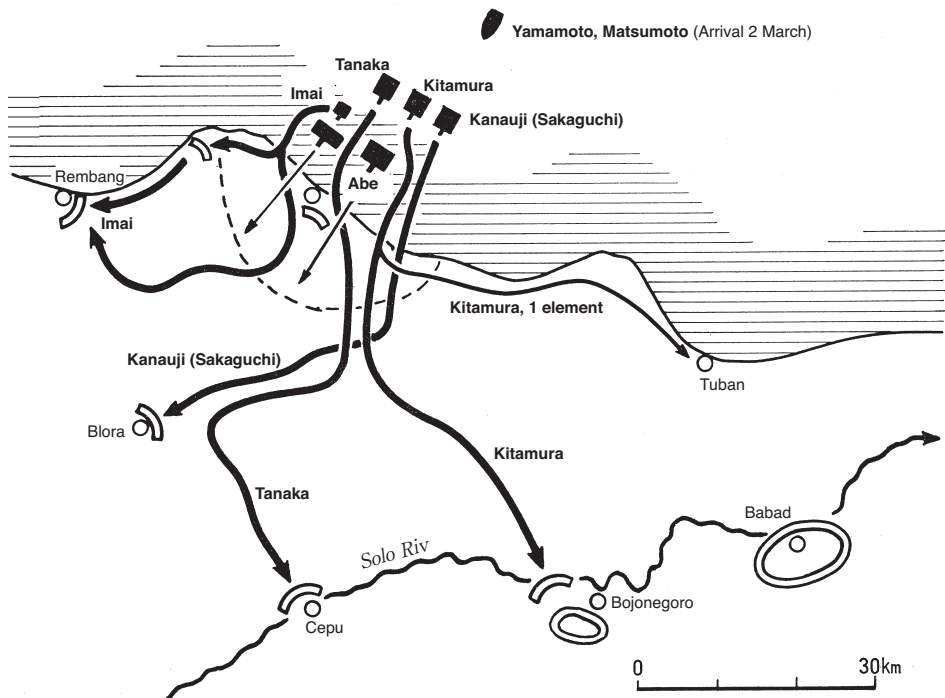


Illustration No. 64 — [the 48th Division] on 1 and 2 March

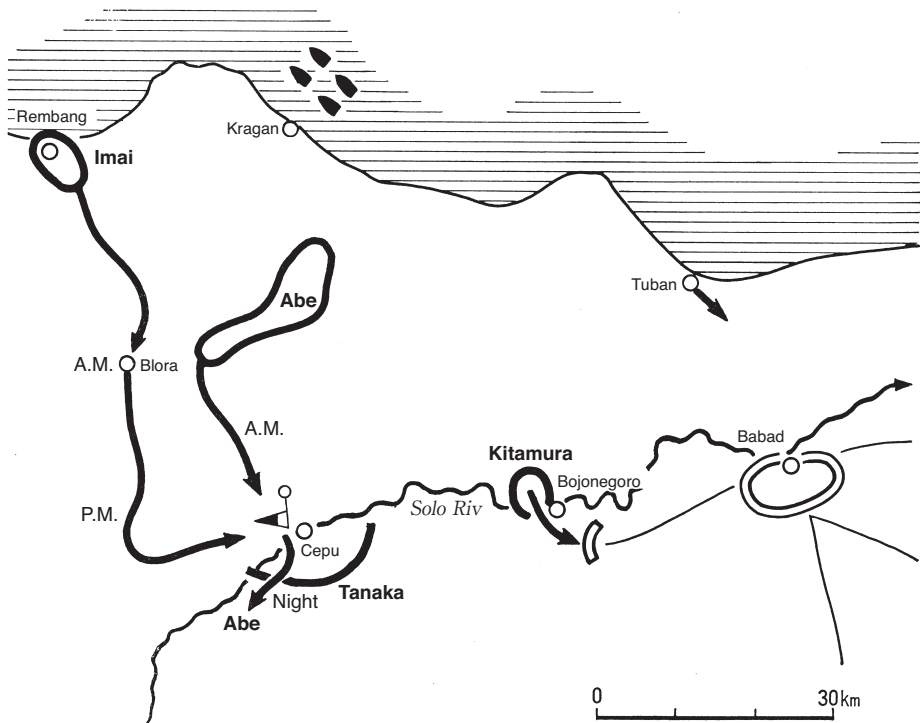


Illustration No. 65 — [The 48th Division] on 4 March

Well, what was the situation of the Abe Unit during that time? The Abe Unit, whose strength consisted of the infantry group headquarters, the 47th Infantry Regiment, the 4th Tank Regiment, the main force of the 48th Mountain Artillery Regiment and the main force of the 48th Engineer Regiment as the core, was assigned to advance toward Mojokerto along the Caruban – Nganjuk – Kertosono – Porong road. Unit Commander Abe designated the 2d Battalion (commander, Maj. Baba Asanoshin) of the 47th Infantry Regiment as the core led by Colonel Yanagi, commander of the regiment, as the advance guard. In the evening of the 4th, Colonel Yanagi sent eight camouflaged reconnaissance raiding teams ahead to seize the bridges between Cepu and Mojokerto, while the advance guard left Cepu in the middle of the night on the 4th. Although the reconnaissance raiding teams were intercepted by 200 to 300 troops of a Dutch East Indies Army unit at a point about four kilometers northwest of Caruban at 0130 on the 5th, they broke through and advanced. They again encountered a Dutch East Indies Army unit at 0450 in the town of Caruban and went into a fierce fight. The advance guard led by Colonel Yanagi joined up with the reconnaissance teams, who were in the middle of a fierce fight in Caruban, immediately dealt a heavy blow to the Dutch East Indies Army unit facing it and drove it back. [Colonel Yanagi] disbanded the reconnaissance raiding teams and then followed [the enemy] in hot pursuit. In Wilangan [the advance guard] was intercepted by a Dutch East Indies Army unit of about 200 troops, but broke through. Then it met and engaged a Dutch East Indies Army unit of about 1,000 troops equipped with guns, tanks, and armored vehicles in Kertosono. It defeated them and charged into Kertosono at 1315 (almost at the same time as the divisional commander crossed the [Solo] River in Cepu). The Dutch East Indies Army unit hurriedly [tried to] blow up the bridge at the east end of Kertosono. Although they had set explosives to blow up all segments of the bridge, fortunately [for the Japanese army], the bridge dropped only at one of its central segments to the point that the water barely flowed over the surface of the bridge without it sinking to the bottom of the river.^(31, 80, 82, 84)



47th Infantry Regiment
Commander, Col.
Yanagi Isamu

Divisional Commander [Tsuchihashi], who had crossed the Solo River at 1300, arrived in Caruban at 1515 and temporarily stopped off there. A report came that “the Abe Unit is attacking a powerful enemy [unit] in Kertosono,” and the divisional commander immediately asked in return, “Has [the unit] already seized Kediri?” Staff Officer Nakahara Makoto rushed out by car right away [to find out]. He hurried to Nganjuk and asked the local people. Although Staff Officer Akatsuka Kazuo, who accompanied the advance guard, should have sent one company separately from Nganjuk to seize the bridge at Kediri, there were no signs that one company had indeed separated from the advance guard there. Staff Officer Nakahara requested Major General Abe to take steps to quickly dispatch a unit. Without delay, the major general sent the 3d Battalion (commander, Maj. Miyaji Ikuzō) of the 47th Infantry Regiment of the main force, which had [already] advanced to Kertosono, south along the road on a bank of the Brantas River toward Kediri. Not only Infantry Group Commander [Abe] and Staff Officer Akatsuka, but also the company commander, who had unofficially been informed beforehand [about the separate advance to Kediri], had totally forgotten all about it due to the war situation facing them.^(79, 80)

The division commander (in Caruban) obtained the following [information on] the situation by the evening:⁽⁷⁹⁾

1. The Abe Unit had driven back about 500 enemy troops with four guns in Kertosono around 1300. However, as the enemy had destroyed the bridge at the east end of the city, the unit was crossing the river in small boats. [According to the Abe Unit,] the Miyaji Battalion had left for the bridge at Kediri.
2. The Tanaka Unit, which had left Cepu following the Abe Unit, had seized the airfield in Maospati with one element at 1130. The Yanagi Battalion (the 2d [1st?] Battalion of the 2d Taiwan Infantry Regiment under Commander Maj. Yanagi Hiroshi) of the Tanaka Unit had charged into [the enemy] barracks in Ngawi around 1330, taken 150 men prisoner, and rescued thirty-two Japanese women and children who had been confined there. [Sixteenth Army] Staff Officer Kuriya Tsugunori was with this battalion.
3. The Imai Unit, which had left Cepu last, had continued its advance, overtaking the Tanaka Unit.
4. The Kitamura Unit had seized a position west of Babad at 1700.
5. The Tanaka Unit was assembling at Caruban in the evening.
6. According to reconnaissance by [a] naval plane, powerful units of the enemy, which had been positioned in the sector northwest of Surabaya, were in quick succession advancing toward Mojokerto along the Lamongan – Surabaya – Mojokerto road. No enemy was spotted moving along the road connecting Malang and Kediri or the road connecting Malang and Surabaya.

Now it became clear that the corps of the eastern territorial headquarters of the Dutch East Indies Army was positioned [in the area] from the banks of the Brantas River to the northwest of Surabaya and that the forces to the northwest of Surabaya were being transferred toward the banks of the Brantas River. It was considered inevitable that a large meeting engagement would occur by the Brantas River. Divisional Commander [Tsuchihashi] decided to immediately send the Kitamura Unit south toward Mojokerto and seize the three bridges near Mojokerto and vicinity, and passed down his order.^(79, 80)

The night of the 5th fell. The greatest concern of Divisional Commander Tsuchihashi was the Kediri bridge, to which he had called the attention of his men in the Philippines and again on the ship, and about which he had once again reminded [his men] after the landing. Immediately on getting up in the morning of the 6th, the divisional commander [once again] asked: "Have they seized Kediri?" The reply was: "We have received no reports yet." The divisional commander lost his temper for the second time after the landing, curtly telling his staff officers, "Go and find out right now."⁽⁷⁹⁾

Soon a report came that the Abe Unit had crossed the Brantas River around 1530 on the previous day, the 5th, driven away the Dutch East Indies Army west of Jombang, and sat the night out there, and that the Miyaji Battalion had seized the bridge in Kediri intact around 1730 on the previous day, the 5th.⁽⁷⁹⁾

The advance company of the Miyaji Battalion had rushed to the Kediri bridge at full speed; while crossing the bridge, it had encountered at 1700 (on the 5th) a Dutch East Indies Army unit, which [also] came rushing from the direction of Jombang; it had repulsed the latter at 1730, and seized the bridge.⁽³¹⁾

[Meanwhile,] the advance guard had successively advanced to the right bank of the Brantas River from Kertosono from around 1600 (on the 5th) onwards. At that time, the footbridge was still hanging there in its [almost] destroyed state and was barely passable for personnel. The railway bridge, however, was still there. As soon as the engineer unit had finished setting

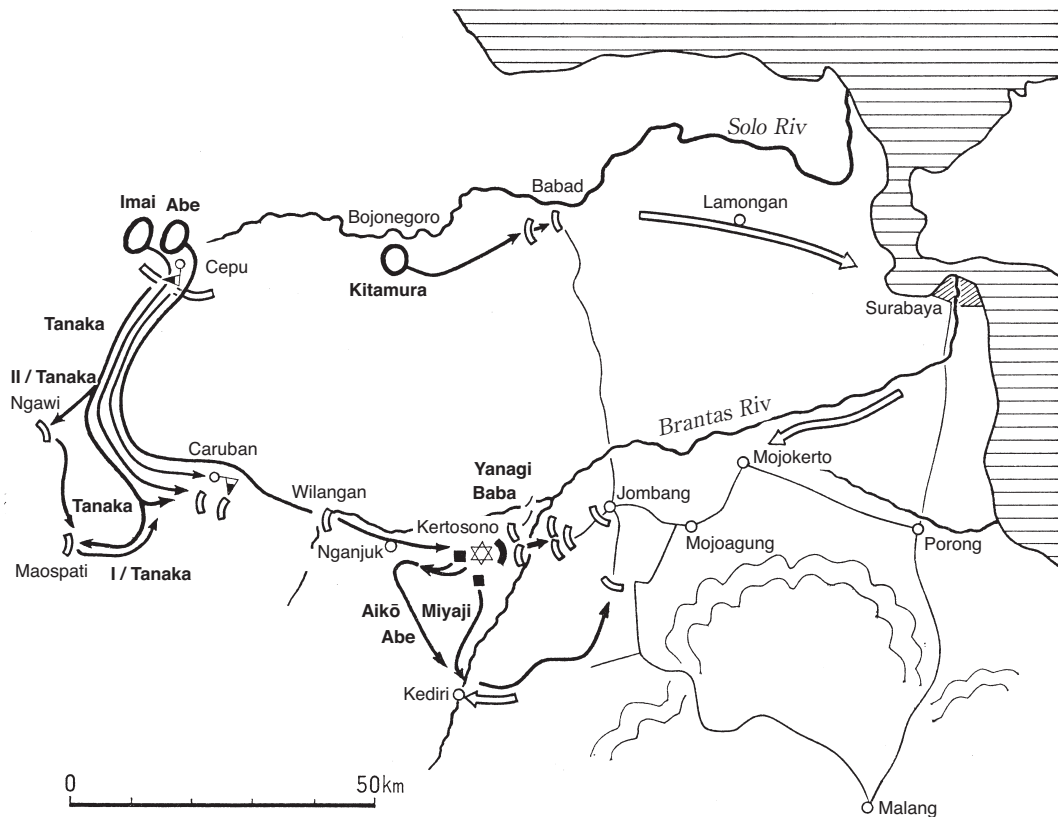


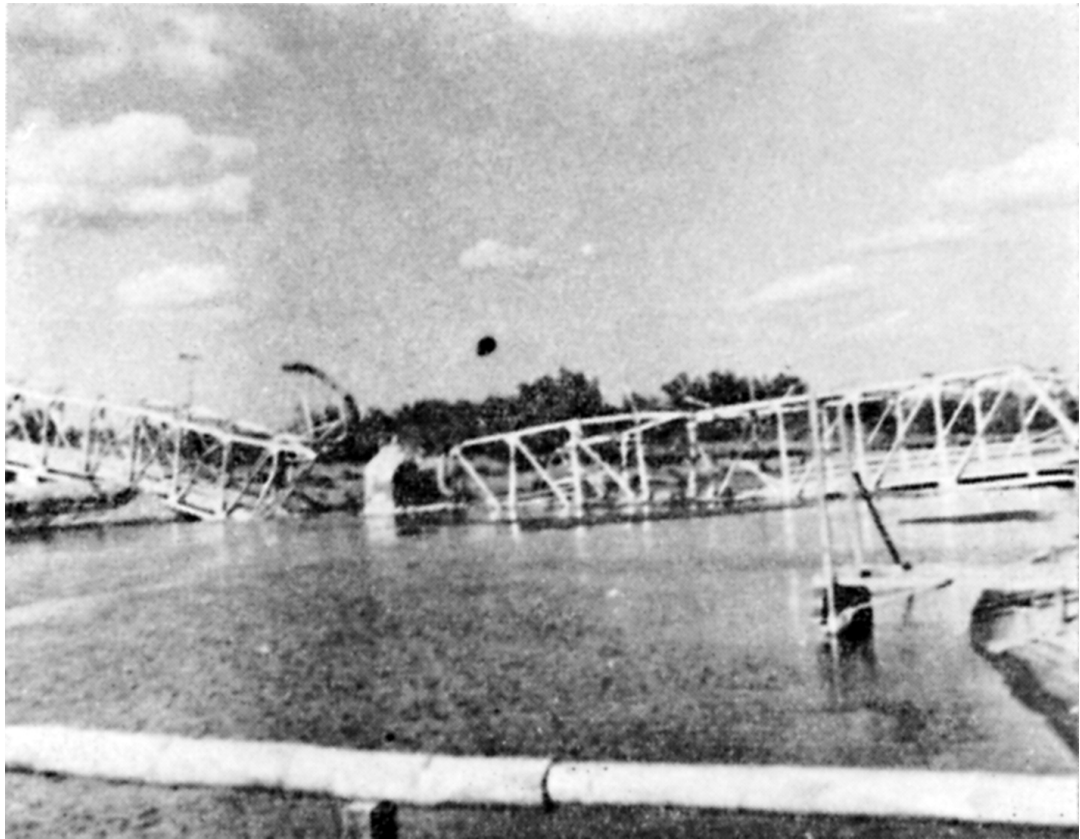
Illustration No. 66 — [The 48th Division on] 5 March

up equipment to cross the railway bridge, the vehicles had been sent across the bridge in succession at midnight. The main force of the remainder of the 1st Echelon (the unit [consisting of] the Aikō Battalion as the core under the command of Major General Abe) had made a U-turn at Kertosono and was heading for Kediri by way of Nganjuk. On learning that the Miyaji Battalion had seized Kediri, the battalion was sent onwards toward Jombang, while the main force had followed immediately in their rear.^(82, 83, 84)

On that day (the 5th), the Kitamura Unit had left Bojonegoro at 1100, and attacked [enemy] positions west of Babad from 1330 onwards, which caused the unit a loss of four officers and two noncommissioned officers killed. However, it had seized the positions at 1715 and launched a night attack on the town of Babad at 2000.^(31, 79, 86)

On the morning of the 6th, on learning of the “successful seizure of the Kediri bridge last evening,” Divisional Commander Tsuchihashi left Caruban at 0730 at the head of the Imai and the Tanaka Units to head for Jombang via the Kediri bridge.^(31, 79)

In the meantime, the advance guard ([consisting of] the Baba Battalion as the core led by Colonel Yanagi [Isamu]), which had crossed the [Brantas] River at a point near Kertosono from the previous evening onwards, had shifted to the pursuit [of the enemy] in motor vehicles when the assembly of the main force was completed around 0500 on the 6th, and charged into the city of Jombang at daybreak. [The advance guard] continued its charge and met resistance from a Dutch East Indies Army unit of about 200 troops equipped with guns at 0820 near Mojoagung. It defeated [the enemy troops], further advanced, and was in the



The Destroyed Bridge at Kertosono

middle of attacking a Dutch East Indies Army unit in Mojokerto. The main force of the Abe Unit ([consisting of] the Miyaji and the Aikō Battalions — [advancing] via the Kediri bridge) was following immediately in its rear.^(31, 79, 83)

Divisional Commander [Tsuchihashi] advanced to Jombang at 1040, moving at the head of the Imai and the Tanaka Unit, and set up his headquarters there. Before noon, he learned that the advance guard of the Abe Unit (i.e. the Yanagi Unit) had charged into Mojokerto around 1100, seized the town, further defeated with one element about one hundred troops of a Dutch East Indies Army unit near the bridge at the north end of Mojokerto and secured the bridge, and that the advance guard had continued its advance toward Porong.

Then, he learned that the Kitamura Unit had conducted a night attack on Babad at 2000 the previous night, seized the town at 0300 on the 6th, and started its southward advance toward Mojokerto, leaving Babad around 1100. He [also] learned that a Dutch East Indies Army unit, which had retreated from Babad toward Surabaya, was returning to Babad. Considering the fact that the Yanagi Unit had already seized the bridges in Mojokerto and also judging that the rear of the Kitamura Unit was not secured, Divisional Commander [Tsuchihashi] gave orders to the Kitamura Unit to stop its southward advance and return to its original assignment.^(31, 79)

The divisional commander left Jombang at 1520 and advanced to Mojokerto at 1600. The Imai and the Tanaka Units, in this order, followed immediately in his rear.^(31, 79)

When the divisional commander advanced to Mojokerto (around 1600 on the 6th), he received a report from a naval plane that “the enemy is assembling into Porong from the west and the south and that there is a hint that they are retreating in Surabaya.”⁽⁷⁹⁾

Note: Of the [Sixteenth] Army staff officers assigned [to the division], Staff Officer Kuriya directed the rescue of the Japanese [residents confined] in Ngawi as described previously, and Staff Officer Nishiura was in charge of reconnaissance and communications by using naval reconnaissance seaplanes.^(42, 45)

The divisional commander instantly made a decision, dictated the following orders separately as direct orders, and had [the orders] delivered by motorbike, intending not to let the Dutch East Indies Army units use the Porong stronghold as their base as well as to keep them away from the Surabaya stronghold.⁽⁷⁹⁾

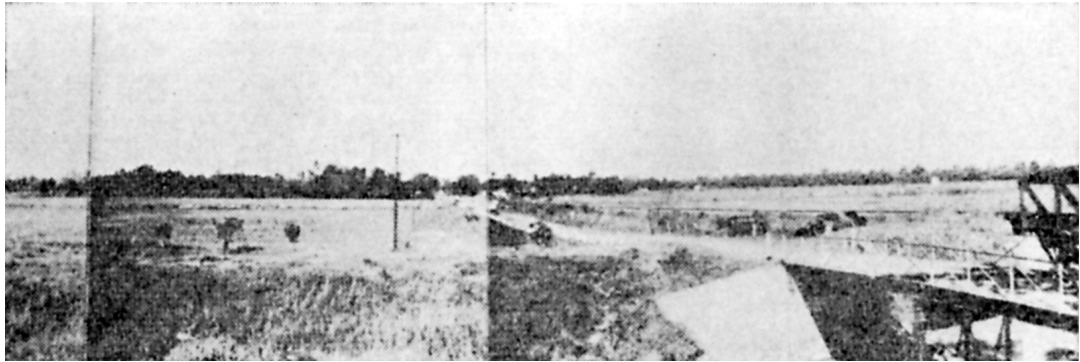
- The Abe Unit shall break through the Porong [stronghold] and advance to the line along the canal in Kedungrejo.
- The Imai Unit shall head northward from Mojosari, charge toward Sidoarjo to approach the rear of the enemy. It shall cooperate with the Abe Unit as needed.
- The Tanaka Unit shall head northward along the west bank sector of the Kalimas River, seize the bridge north of Krijan and the highland on its northwest side, and reconnoiter the enemy position.

The Seizure of Porong (*See Illustrations No. 67 and No. 68*)

When Divisional Commander [Tsuchihashi] gave the previously mentioned orders, Colonel Yanagi [Isamu], commander of the advance guard of the Abe Unit, had already seized Porong.

As we have seen, it was said that in Porong, there were midway defense works between the garrison town of Malang and the Surabaya stronghold, a stronghold with a number of two-storied pillboxes and barbed wire entanglements, and a V-shaped position with narrowing sides, which made the 48th Division give it a careful consideration. Based on the division order, Unit Commander Abe showed [his unit] that “the division intends to seize the Porong stronghold and that [accordingly] the Abe Unit will advance to [a line] about eight kilometers northwest of the Porong stronghold, and while reconnoitering the enemy’s situation and the terrain, cover the deployment of the division,” and gave orders to the advance guard to move up to the line.⁽⁸²⁾

After seizing the bridges and the urban area of Mojokerto, Colonel Yanagi had headed eastward with an advance company [consisting of] one infantry company, one tank troop and one mountain artillery battery as the core, while keeping [the remaining] three infantry companies as the core under his direct command. He had one element advance separately from Mojosari to secure the two bridges over the Porong River, while he himself continued heading eastward. While advancing, he had received information by a communication cylinder dropped from a [Japanese] naval plane, which said: “The enemy is now shifting its force from the direction of the cities of Malang and Surabaya to the Porong stronghold to deploy them there.” The colonel instantly decided on his own judgment to seize the Porong stronghold and immediately gave an order to attack it. The troops, which came from the Oita Regimental District in northern Kyūshū, charged boldly. Lt. Col. Kumagai Shōji, commander of the 4th Tank Regiment, and Lt. Col. Yamaguchi Kayoshi, commander of the 48th Mountain Artillery Regiment, who accompanied Colonel Yanagi, quickly deployed their own units and



The Battlefield Near the Porong Stronghold

along with naval planes supported [the charge]. They broke through part of the Porong Position at 1520 and advanced to the line of a stream on the west side of Kejapanan at 1530. In Kejapanan and vicinity, 1,200 to 1,300 troops of a Dutch East Indies Army unit had assembled and part of them fought back. At 1550, [the Japanese] launched a fierce attack on Kejapanan with infantry, tanks and artillery in close coordination, broke at a stroke through [the defense of] the city and cut off the road connecting Surabaya and Malang. One element rapidly advanced to the bridges in Porong, and secured them. The Baba Battalion was the only infantry [battalion] that fought from the beginning to the end. It had already seized the city before the Miyaji and Aikō Battalion of the main force of the Abe Unit joined the battle.^(83, 84)

Divisional Commander [Tsuchihashi] was very pleased to learn that Colonel Yanagi had quickly seized Porong on his own judgment. He advanced his headquarters from Mojokerto to Mojosari in the evening.⁽⁷⁹⁾ That is to say, on the 6th, the division headquarters advanced from Caruban to Jombang, then to Mojokerto, and further to Mojosari in [just] one day.

Preparations for Seizing the Surabaya Stronghold (*See Illustration No. 69*)

By the previously described division order of around 1600 on the 6th and the division order that followed the seizure of Porong, the units moved during the night of the 6th and advanced to the sectors south and southwest of the Surabaya stronghold. It was decided to let Infantry Group Commander Abe take command of the Yanagi (the 47th Infantry) and the Imai (the 1st Taiwan Infantry) Regiments together. Colonel Yanagi employed the 3d Battalion (the Miyaji Battalion), which was returned from Major General Abe, [instead] as the van, left the Porong sector at 2100 on the 6th, and advanced to an area about four kilometers south of Surabaya at 0300 on the 7th, where he began to reconnoiter the position of the enemy and the terrain. By the morning of the 7th, the Imai Regiment had advanced to the front west of and level with [Colonel Yanagi], and the Tanaka (the 2d Taiwan Infantry) Regiment to the area northwest of Imai (i.e. southwest of the Surabaya stronghold) and began reconnoitering the position of the enemy and the terrain.^(79, 83)

On the previous day (the 6th) while in pursuit of the enemy toward Mojokerto after the engagement in Mojoagung, the advance guard had [found and] obtained a detailed [enemy] "deployment plan of Surabaya" in an abandoned car. Taking a look at it, Colonel Yanagi had felt, "this gives me confidence in a sure victory."⁽⁸⁴⁾ Divisional Commander Tsuchihashi, who had advanced to Mojokerto at 1600 on the same day (the 6th), looked at the plan and felt: "The defense of Surabaya seems considerably [strong], but I wonder whether it is actually

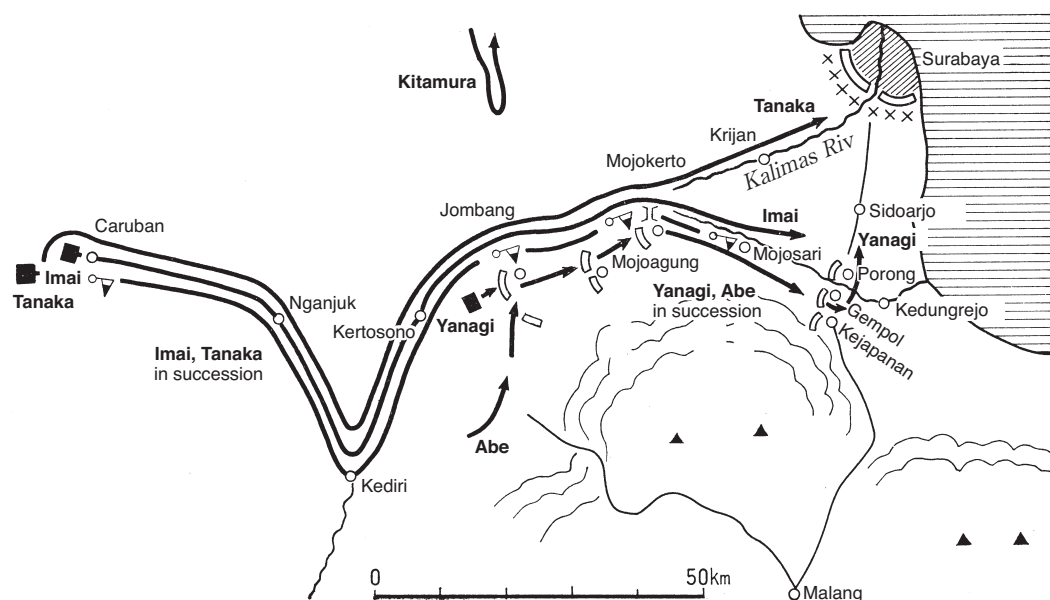


Illustration No. 67 — [The 48th Division on] 6 March

so. In any case, we should avoid a reckless attack to minimize loss and tactfully seize the city.”⁽⁷⁹⁾ When asked by an embedded war correspondent: “Are you going to enter Surabaya on the Army Day (10 March)?” the divisional commander had answered: “We will seize Surabaya when the prospects for an attack are promising. We do not carry out an unreasonable attack at the risk of causing [many] casualties.”⁽⁷⁹⁾ Giving detailed orders concerning reconnaissance, the division commander planned to gather [more] materials for his attack plan.⁽⁷⁹⁾

Before noon on that day (the 7th), the divisional commander advanced his command post from Mojosari to Sidoarjo.⁽⁷⁹⁾

Right after that (around noon on the 7th), a report came from the front line unit, which said: “There are signs of flooding. The river is rising inch by inch.” The divisional commander recalled what Sixteenth Army Staff Officer Major Kuriya had told him on the transport ship and immediately sent for him at the front line. The staff officer rushed to the branching point on the Brantas River and operated the water gate in such a way that the water flow, which had been set to flow into the Kalimas River, went into the direction of the Porong River.⁽⁷⁹⁾

On the next day, 8 March, the change of the flow at the water gate showed effect and the level of the river started to fall.⁽⁷⁹⁾

The divisional commander learned that the Kitamura Unit had seized Lamongan (halfway between Babad and Gresik) after a minor engagement around 1730 on the previous day, the 7th.⁽⁷⁹⁾

By that morning (of the 8th), the divisional commander had come to the conclusion that the Surabaya position was not so strong. He decided to attack from the evening of the next day, the 9th, onwards and passed down the following attack order at 0800 on that day (the 8th).⁽⁷⁹⁾

1. Launch of the attack: at 2030 after sunset on the 9th

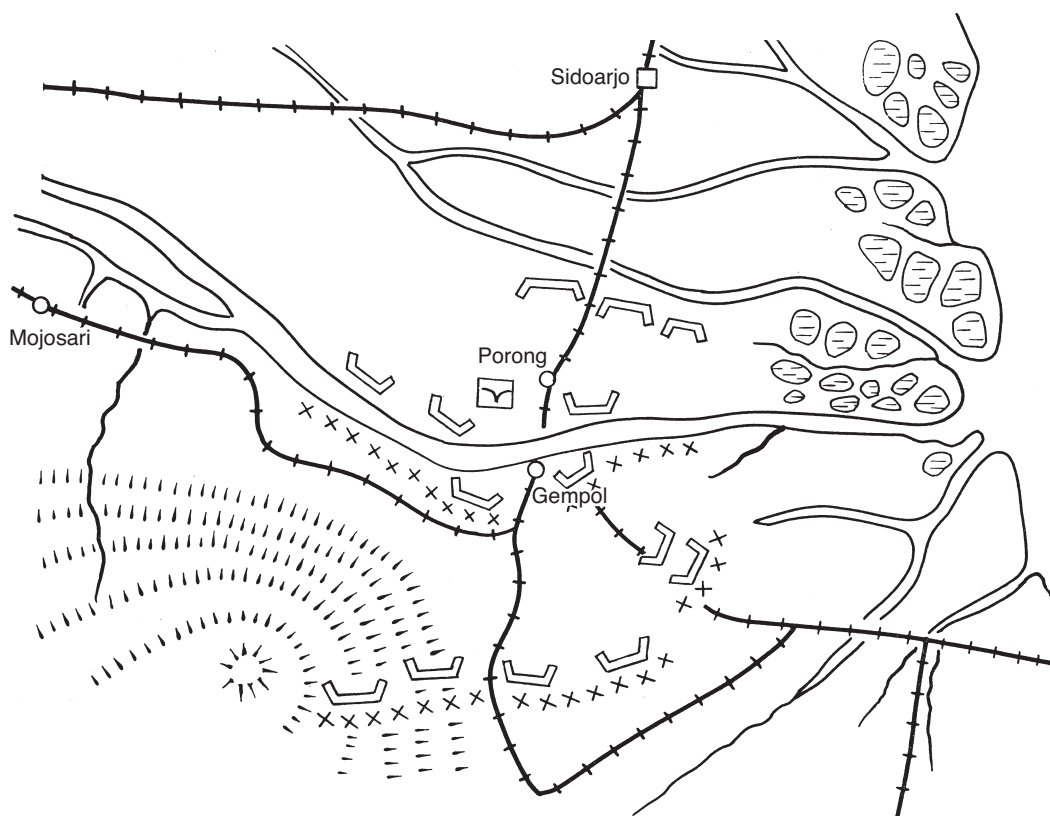
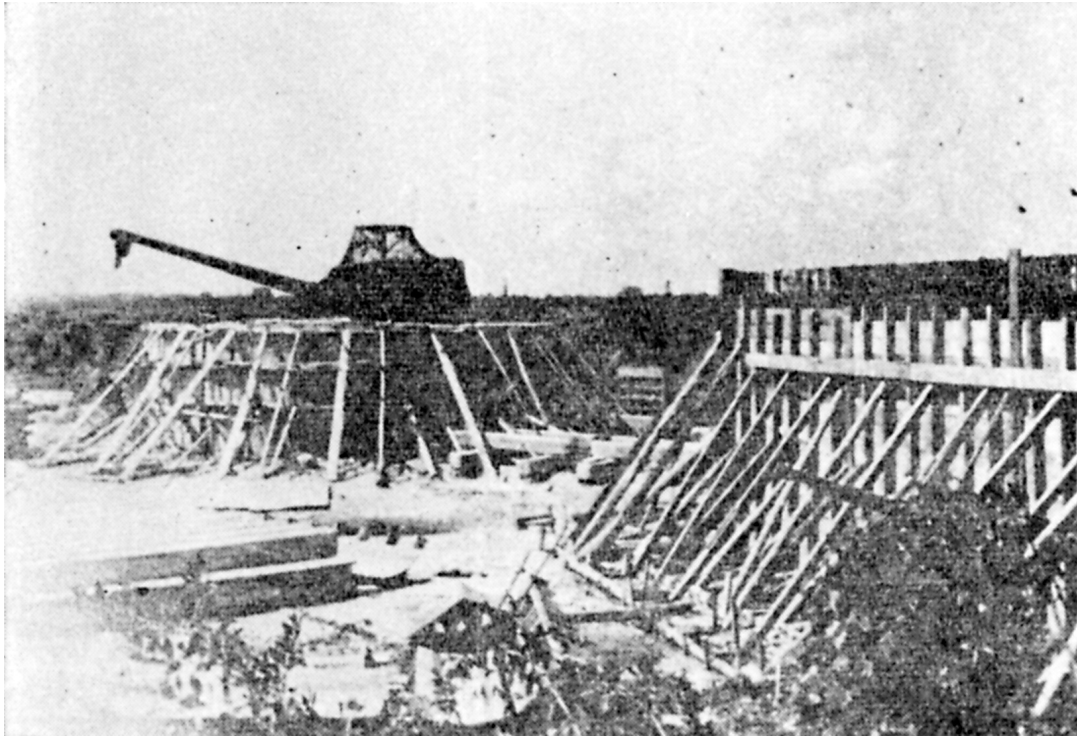


Illustration No. 68 — The Situation of the Porong Stronghold as Was Known Just After the Landing

2. Main attack: [from] the south front (the front of the Abe Unit)
3. The unit [consisting of] both the Imai and the Yanagi Regiments as the core under the command of Major General Abe shall cross the canal of Wonokromo by surprise, storm the enemy artillery position in the east sector of Surabaya, then turn its front by 90 degrees, dribble through Surabaya and attack the positions of the enemy from behind.
4. After seizing the southwest corner, the Tanaka Unit shall upset the [enemy] position with tanks and overrun the artillery position.
5. The Kitamura Unit shall just hold down the west front and prevent the enemy from escaping. The 3d Battalion of the 2d Taiwan Infantry Regiment shall be assigned to it.
6. Artillery fire: shall be conducted from 1400 to 1600 and from 1830 to 2000 on the 8th, and from 1400 to 1600 on the 9th.
[The unit shall first] destroy the southwest corner position of the enemy, [halt the fire] and resume the fire at 1630 [1830?].
7. At some time on the 8th and the 9th, the [most] important points of the [enemy] positions as well as the artillery positions shall be bombarded.

Surrender of the Eastern Corps of the Dutch East Indies Army

The units had assiduously been reconnoitering the position of the enemy and the terrain. After obtaining approval from Divisional Commander [Tsuchihashi], Regimental Commander Yanagi selected one company out of each battalion and let them carry out a recon-



The Modung Battery on the Island of Madura (Under Construction at that Time)

naissance in force. These companies entered the city of Surabaya from the east at 1000 on the 8th, but no Dutch East Indies Army units were spotted.⁽³¹⁾

Note: Ninety-three pillbox positions were spotted north of the Wonokromo canal in the front of the Yanagi Regiment.⁽⁸⁴⁾

Around 1000, the divisional commander received an aircraft report saying that a white flag was flying on the bridge of Wonokromo (the southern entrance to Surabaya) and immediately sent Staff Officer Kuriya to Surabaya to bring the persons in charge back with him.⁽⁷⁹⁾

Then at 1030, a report came from the Tanaka Unit: "We will send the military envoy, who has come to the unit, to division headquarters."⁽⁷⁹⁾

The divisional commander waited well into the afternoon for Staff Officer Kuriya to return, but he was long in coming back. With the first artillery bombardment scheduled to start at 1400 on the 8th, [the divisional commander] hesitated whether he should open fire as scheduled, but in the end, he decided to cancel the bombardment plan and gave orders to that effect at 1330. For the 15-cm. Howitzer Battery of the 17th Field Heavy Artillery Regiment, which had come in high spirits from Manchuria, the Java operation ended with firing not a single gunshot.⁽⁷⁹⁾

At 1420, Staff Officer Kuriya returned, accompanied by the governor of East Java, the mayor of Surabaya and the commander of the garrison army in Surabaya (an artillery lieutenant colonel) but, needless to say, none of them held the supreme command of the entire Dutch East Indies Army in East Java. Considering it impossible to hold ceasefire [talks] with them, Divisional Commander [Tsuchihashi] showed the following demands to them and canceled the talks.⁽⁷⁹⁾

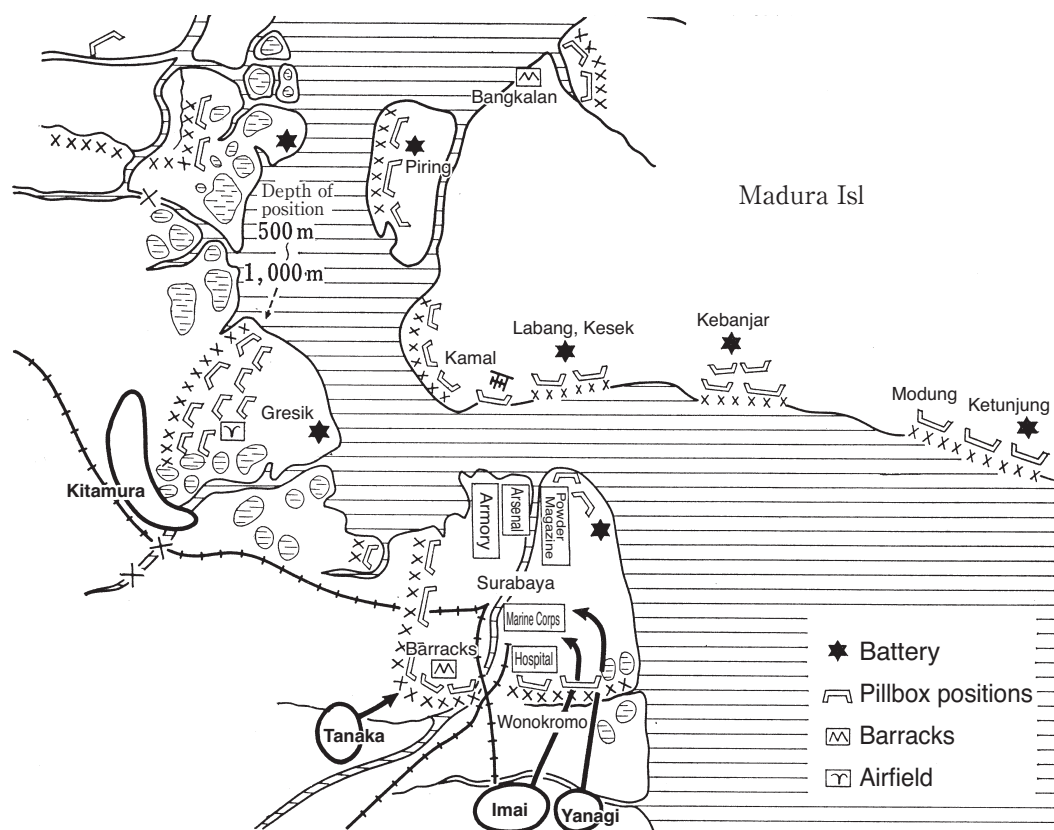


Illustration No. 69 — The Known Situation of the Surabaya Stronghold and the Attack Plan

1. As the Japanese Army would immediately be brought into Surabaya, they should promptly and thoroughly inform the army, police and civilians [there] so that no unforeseen and unfortunate incidents would occur.
2. They should not destroy weapons and ammunition, or other military materiél, facilities, and resources.
3. They should have the commanders of Gresik and Madura present themselves to the commander of the 48th Division as soon as possible.

After that, the divisional commander passed down orders that the reconnaissance teams should go into Surabaya immediately, and the [other] units by 1700, and that the Yanagi and the Imai Regiments should guard respectively the northern and the southern halves of the city of Surabaya.⁽⁷⁹⁾

Communications with the Sixteenth Army headquarters had not yet been established since the landing, and they failed to be established that day, too.⁽⁷⁹⁾

On the next day, 9 March, in view of the importance of Malang, the division commander assigned Major General Abe to take command of a unit [consisting of] the 2d Taiwan Infantry Regiment as the core, seize the city and guard it. The unit arrived in Malang around 1130, seized it without a hitch, and took charge of the guarding of the city.⁽⁷⁹⁾

Then, learning that the Kitamura Unit had advanced into Cerme (about ten kilometers southwest of Gresik) that morning, the divisional commander urged it to promptly advance to Gresik. He also sent Staff Officer Nakahara Makoto to Surabaya to have him study how to send troops to [the island of] Madura.⁽⁷⁹⁾

At 1330 (on the 9th), by a communications cylinder dropped from a [Japanese] plane, the divisional commander learned for the first time about the complete surrender of the Dutch East Indies Army as well as the surrender terms, which the [Sixteenth] Army headquarters had let the Dutch East Indies side sign. This message was the first communication that the division had received from the army headquarters since its landing on Java.⁽⁷⁹⁾

Then, at the report from Major General Abe that Major General Ilgen, the eastern territorial commander and commander of the 3d Division, had presented himself to Major General Abe, the division commander immediately ordered [Abe] to send [Major General Ilgen] to the divisional headquarters in Sidoarjo. Major General Ilgen arrived [there] at 2030. Simultaneously, the commander of the garrison army on Madura also presented himself.⁽⁷⁹⁾

The divisional commander immediately held the surrender ceremony. Major General Ilgen (who was accompanied by the Madura garrison army commander and four other people) said that he had the authority to surrender, and signed a surrender document presented by the divisional commander. After that, Major General Ilgen accepted Division Commander Tsuchihashi's demand to "go to Surabaya right now and tell over the radio that all your men shall assemble and surrender," and left.⁽⁷⁹⁾

At 1400 on that day (the 9th), the Kitamura Unit entered Gresik, while one company of the 47th Infantry Regiment went ashore in Kamal on the island of Madura.⁽⁷⁹⁾

The next morning, on the 10th, Major General Ilgen broadcast the announcement as promised. The divisional commander sent Major General Ilgen to Major General Abe in Malang to be sent to an internment camp. Meanwhile, the divisional commander left Sidoarjo at 1000 on that day (the 10th) and moved his command post to Surabaya at 1400.⁽⁷⁹⁾

6. Conclusion of the Java Invasion Operation and the Operations of the Allied Forces

The Troop Strength [Involved in] the Operation and the Military Gains

As of 20 December 1941, the troop strength scheduled to be employed by the Sixteenth Army (excluding air and shipping units) was 97,800 men.⁽⁵⁾ However, the [actual] number of troops that landed on the island of Java in the first [transport] for the invasion [operation] (i.e. the troop strength that landed during the first ten days of March, including airfield duty units and shipping units) was about 55,000.⁽⁶⁾

The capitulation of the allied forces on Java was completed when the 8,000 troops of the British and Australian Army which had been positioned in the mountain range east of Bandung surrendered on 12 March.^(32, 33)

When the Dutch East Indies Army surrendered on 9 March, the following numbers were reported from the Dutch East Indies side concerning its entire army:⁽¹³⁾

Prisoners of war:	93,000 (including about 2,000 officers)
Breakdown:	Units on Java 60,000

Units outside Java	18,000
Volunteers	15,000
Captured weaponry:	
152 aircraft (breakdown: 24 bombers, 45 fighter planes, and 83 other planes)	
367 tanks (including armored vehicles)	
732 guns	
1,567 machine guns (mainly for aircraft)	
97,384 firearms	
4,105 bombs	
120,000 boxes of explosives	
30,000,000 shells of various kinds	
34,000 hand grenades	
72,317,100 bullets of various kinds	

The military gains achieved on Java by 25 March were as follows:⁽¹⁴⁾

Prisoners of war:	82,618 in total	
Breakdown	Dutch East Indies Armed Forces	66,219
	Australian Armed Forces	4,890
	British Armed Forces	10,626
	U.S. Armed Forces	883
Captured weaponry:		
177 aircraft		
940 guns in total (breakdown: 108 heavy guns, 161 field or mountain guns, 83 anti-aircraft guns and 588 [other] guns such as autocannons, antitank guns, trench mortars in total)		
4,228 heavy or light machine guns		
80,778 rifles and pistols		
5, 153 anti-aircraft searchlights		
1,728,585 rounds of gun ammunition		
89,071,820 cartridges for machine guns and rifles		
36,000 bombs		
1,059 vehicles in total [consisting of] vehicles, tanks, armored vehicles, and special vehicles		
9,500 motor vehicles		
7,108 railway carriages		
About one year's supply of medicines for 100,000 people		

The loss of personnel that the Sixteenth Army sustained was as follows:

1. From the day of the opening of the hostilities to 31 January
35 men killed (including 7 officers), 21 men died of wounds, 0 men died from a disease contracted at the front, 130 men wounded, 6 men contracted a disease at the front
2. The loss it sustained during the Java Operation:

	1 March		2–5 March	
	killed	wounded	killed	wounded
Shōji Detachment	63	165	19	26
Sakaguchi Detachment	1	18	2	28
2d Division	15	10	64	180
48th Division	91	254	0	21
In total	170	447	85	255

Of the convoys of the first transport of the Java invasion operation, the convoy of the Shōji Detachment completed disembarkation on 4 March, and the convoy of the Sakaguchi Detachment and the 48th Division on 6 March. As for the main force of the Sixteenth Army, after the seizure of Batavia, the ships were brought to that port for disembarkation, and the final convoy started its return [to its original port] from that port on 14 March. As we have seen, the transport of the Java invasion units was to be carried out in three transports (1st transport: 560,000 tons, 2d transport: 150,000 tons, 3d transport: 100,000 tons; 810,000 tons in total). The convoy of the 2d transport departed from Sakaide, Ujina, Moji, Dalian, Qingdao, Shanghai, Gaoxiong and Lingayen, respectively carrying the 3d Battalion of the 2d Field Artillery Regiment and other units to be carried in the 2d transport in the following ships, which assembled in Cam Ranh Bay between 9 and 20 March, and operated on a schedule to land in Java on 29 March.^(27, 94)

England-maru, France-maru, Kamo-i-maru [Shin'i-maru], Shunkō-maru, Rashin-maru, Manshū-maru, London-maru, Akiura-maru, Chile-maru, Nichiren-maru, Kamo-maru, Tamahoko-maru and Delagoa-maru

However, the Java invasion operation was completed as early as 9 March. [As a result,] it was decided to transport only such necessary units as the field artillery battalion of the 2d Division [to Java] and redeploy the other units to other areas or send them back home.^(27, 36)

On 10 March, the Emperor called the chiefs of the Army and the Navy General Staff to his presence and bestowed an Imperial Rescript on the Commanders in Chief of the Southern Army and the Combined Fleet, which read as follows:⁽¹³⁾

Imperial Rescript

The units of the Army and the Navy which executed operations in the East Indies area have in close and effective cooperation covered a long distance, overcome many difficulties, and skillfully destroyed the enemy air power as well as its naval vessels. At the same time, the units resolutely carried out extremely difficult landing operations in various areas and while crushing the formidable enemy everywhere, thoroughly destroyed all the enemy key bases with great speed and boldness, and have swept away the power of the enemy.

We have the greatest respect for them.

On 12 March, various ceremonies of the second celebration day of the war victory were held in the homeland.⁽¹³⁾

The Operations of the Allied Forces (*See Illustration No. 70*)

According to the published war history of Britain and the statements of Lieutenant General Ter Poorten and other generals of the Dutch East Indies Army, the operations of the allied forces were carried out in outline as follows:^(50, 51)

On 3 January, the American-British-Dutch-Australian [ABDA] Command was formed and its Supreme Commander General Wavell arrived in Java on 10 January. On the 18th, he set up his general headquarters in Lembang but left Java after disbanding it on 25 February.⁽⁵¹⁾

Earlier on 2 January, Britain had decided to reinforce the Dutch East Indies with two divisions from the Middle East. At the end of January, when Singapore had become isolated, General Wavell made the decision to employ the Australian division that was expected to arrive at the end of February for Sumatra and the Australian division and armored brigade that were scheduled to arrive in March for Java. However, as the situation became critical, he requested Lieutenant General Ter Poorten on 5 February to divert a total of two battalions from Batavia and Cimahi on Java to Sumatra. In the middle of February, when [the Japanese] conducted the Bangka and Palembang operations, the total troop strength of the Dutch East Indies Army in Sumatra was seven battalions, of which one battalion was stationed in Palembang and another battalion on the islands of Bangka and Belitung. These two battalions were the above-mentioned force that had been diverted from Java. The bulk of these two battalions and an advance party of the Australian Army, which had been arriving in southern Sumatra at that time, retreated to Java one after another.^(50, 51) Right after [the Japanese] carried out the landing on Bali (on 20 February), the decision was made to call off the additional deployment of the two Australian Army divisions to the Dutch East Indies (their destination was changed to Burma and India [instead]).⁽⁵¹⁾

When [the Japanese] launched the Java landing operations, the troop strength on Java consisted of about 65,000 Dutch East Indies Army troops and about 16,000 U.S., British and Australian Army troops, totaling about 81,000 troops.⁽⁵¹⁾

Of the troops of the Dutch East Indies Army, about 25,000 troops belonged to regular units, which consisted of four infantry regiments (with three battalions each) as the core. There were three divisional headquarters, and apart from these, there was the Bandung Sector Garrison Army headquarters. The main force of the U.S., British and Australian Army was called the "Black Force" and consisted of two infantry battalions as its core.⁽⁵¹⁾ [Editor's note: The "Black Force" was named after its commander Brig. Gen. A.S. Blackburn.]

The disposition of the main regular units [of the Dutch East Indies Army] at the time when [the Japanese] launched the Java landing operation was in outline as follows:⁽⁵⁰⁾

- Army headquarters (Lieutenant General Ter Poorten): Bandung
- Western Java Corps ([led by] 1st Division Commander, Major General Schilling)
 - Headquarters: Batavia
 - 1st Infantry Regiment: Batavia, Tangerang sector
 - 2d Infantry Regiment: Buitenzorg sector
 - Black Force: Buitenzorg sector
- Bandung Area Garrison Army Corps (Major General Pesman)
 - Headquarters: Bandung

4th Infantry Regiment: the area stretching from Cirebon and vicinity in the east to Krawang and vicinity in the west, with its center in Bandung
 Central Java Corps (2d Division Commander, Major General Cox)
 Headquarters: Magelang
 No regular infantry regiments
 Eastern Java Corps (3d Division Commander, Major General Ilgen)
 Headquarters: Surabaya area (primarily in Malang)
 3d Infantry Regiment: with its main force in the area of Babad and Bojonegoro, and one element in the area of Cepu and Kertosono

Lieutenant General Ter Poorten had judged that the Japanese army would be able to employ six to seven divisions for the invasion of Java and that the Japanese would have their main force land in western Java. Because of this, he had transferred the 2d Infantry Regiment from Bandung to the Western Java Corps, and the 4th Infantry Regiment from the Central Java Corps to the newly established Bandung Area Garrison Army Corps at the end of February.⁽⁵⁰⁾

Lieutenant General Ter Poorten had given orders to the Eastern Java Corps to hold on to the Surabaya stronghold as long as possible, and to the Central Java Corps to conduct a protracted struggle, while putting on a show that its strength was greater than it was, and retreat in the end towards Cilacap and Bandung. He had [also] ordered the Western Java Corps to aggressively make counterattacks. He had judged that even if the Japanese landed at the coast north of Bandung (western central Java), it would be just for establishing a beachhead in Cirebon.⁽⁵⁰⁾

On the morning of 1 March, at the start of the landing of the Japanese troops, the Western Java Corps began to move westwards in order to counterattack the Maruyama Division on the line connecting Tangerang and Leuwiliang. The Black Force headed for Leuwiliang. The Bandung Area Garrison Army Corps launched a counterattack against the Shōji Detachment ([landing at] Eretan) via a coastal road with the battalion from Cirebon. In the afternoon, it turned out that Kalijati had been taken. In the late afternoon of the 1st, Lieutenant General Ter Poorten passed down orders to the Western Java Corps to divert the 2d Infantry Regiment (as one of its battalions had not yet returned from [its assignment in] West Sumatra, its actual strength was [only] two battalions), one battalion of the 1st Infantry Regiment and the Black Force ([consisting of] two battalions as its core) to be put under the command of the Bandung Area Garrison Army Corps for [a counterattack] to destroy the Shōji Detachment.⁽⁵⁰⁾

On 2 March, Bandung Area Garrison Army Commander Major General Pesman carried out a counterattack with the [Japanese] landing point at Eretan as the general target. The battalion in Cirebon moved westward, while twenty-five tanks as well as one infantry battalion from the Bandung stronghold headed northward by way of Subang, and one battalion of the 1st Infantry Regiment in Batavia moved eastward, following a route close to the coast. However, [the counterattack] ended up in failure. On that day, the 2d Infantry Regiment ([consisting of] two battalions) arrived in the sector west of Bandung. The Black Force, having expressed its [negative] opinion on the plan, did not shift its position.^(50, 51)

On 3 March, with the 2d Infantry Regiment ([consisting of] two battalions) added to the strength of the previous day, [Major General Pesman] launched a counterattack with Kalijati as the primary target. Although the 2d Infantry Regiment was bombed by the Endō Air Di-

vision when it was moving forward via Purwakarta, it engaged with the Wakamatsu Battalion until the morning of the following day, the 4th. One battalion of the 1st Infantry Regiment, which was moving east from Batavia, engaged on the morning of the 4th the Egashira Battalion, which had moved via Subang and Kalijati [to Cikampek]. On that day (the 3d), the Black Force ([consisting of] two battalions) started to engage the Nasu Detachment at Leuwiliang. [Also] on that day (the 3d), the main force of one of the battalions, which had been sent earlier to southern Sumatra, came [back] ashore in Wijnkoopsbaai on the southwest coast [of Java] and started its advance towards Bandung. Further, one semi-regular battalion was diverted from the Central Java Corps to Bandung.⁽⁵⁰⁾

On the morning of 4 March, engagements went on in Cikampek (with the Egashira Battalion), Purwakarta (with the Wakamatsu Battalion) and Leuwiliang (with the Nasu Detachment). Before noon, Lieutenant General Ter Poorten gave orders to the units in Batavia and Buitenzorg area to assemble in the Bandung stronghold. [He also] ordered the Black Force to retreat to Sukabumi.^(50, 51)

Around noon on 5 March, the units in Batavia had finished their retreat. In the afternoon, the Black Force withdrew from its rear positions around Buitenzorg and vicinity. It was [newly] assigned to take charge of the eastern sector of the Bandung defense line.^(50, 51)

On 6 March, the Shōji Detachment attacked the positions south of Ciater. Lieutenant General Ter Poorten decided to make the position at Lembang ([with the unit consisting of] one regular battalion as its core) his main position, and made up his mind that he would surrender Bandung if this position should be seized.

On the afternoon of 7 March, Lembang was taken. Thus, he sent a military envoy to the Shōji Detachment with an offer to surrender.⁽⁵⁰⁾

As we have seen, the Central Java Corps did not have a regular regiment. Major General Cox, the commander of the 2d Division, tried to block the advance of the Sakaguchi Detachment at vital positions with militia units, as well as the deployment of a cavalry unit. [In the meantime,] he moved its headquarters from Magelang to Wangon.⁽⁵⁰⁾

Major General Ilgen, commander of the Eastern Java Corps (and commander of the 3d Division) had intended to launch an aggressive counterattack from the direction of the Solo River. He had positioned the 8th Battalion of the 3d Infantry Regiment in Bojonegoro and the 13th Battalion in Babad, and the 3d Battalion on the island of Madura (the Surabaya stronghold area), while positioning the semi-regular 19th Battalion in the Cepu and the Kertosono areas. As soon as Bojonegoro and Cepu were taken, the commander changed the disposition: [while leaving] the 13th Battalion in Babad (as before), he shifted the 8th Battalion to Sukorame, south [of Babad], the semi-regular 19th Battalion to Kertosono and the 3d Battalion to Surabaya. When Major General Ilgen learned that despite the fierce engagement that occurred in Kertosono, the Japanese presence in the Babad area consisted of nothing more than a reconnaissance regiment (the Kitamura Unit), he had the 3d Battalion in Surabaya move to Mojokerto to have it cover the retreat [of other troops], and [in the meantime] had the 8th and the 13th Battalions retreat respectively to Porong and Gempol, and the semi-regular 19th Battalion to Pandakan, after which he had the 3d Battalion retreat to Gempol. Then when the Porong sector was broken through [by the Japanese], Major General Ilgen had the 13th and the semi-regular 19th Battalions retreat to the east of Malang, and the 3d and 8th Battalion respectively to Jember and Lumajang, while having his headquarters pull back to

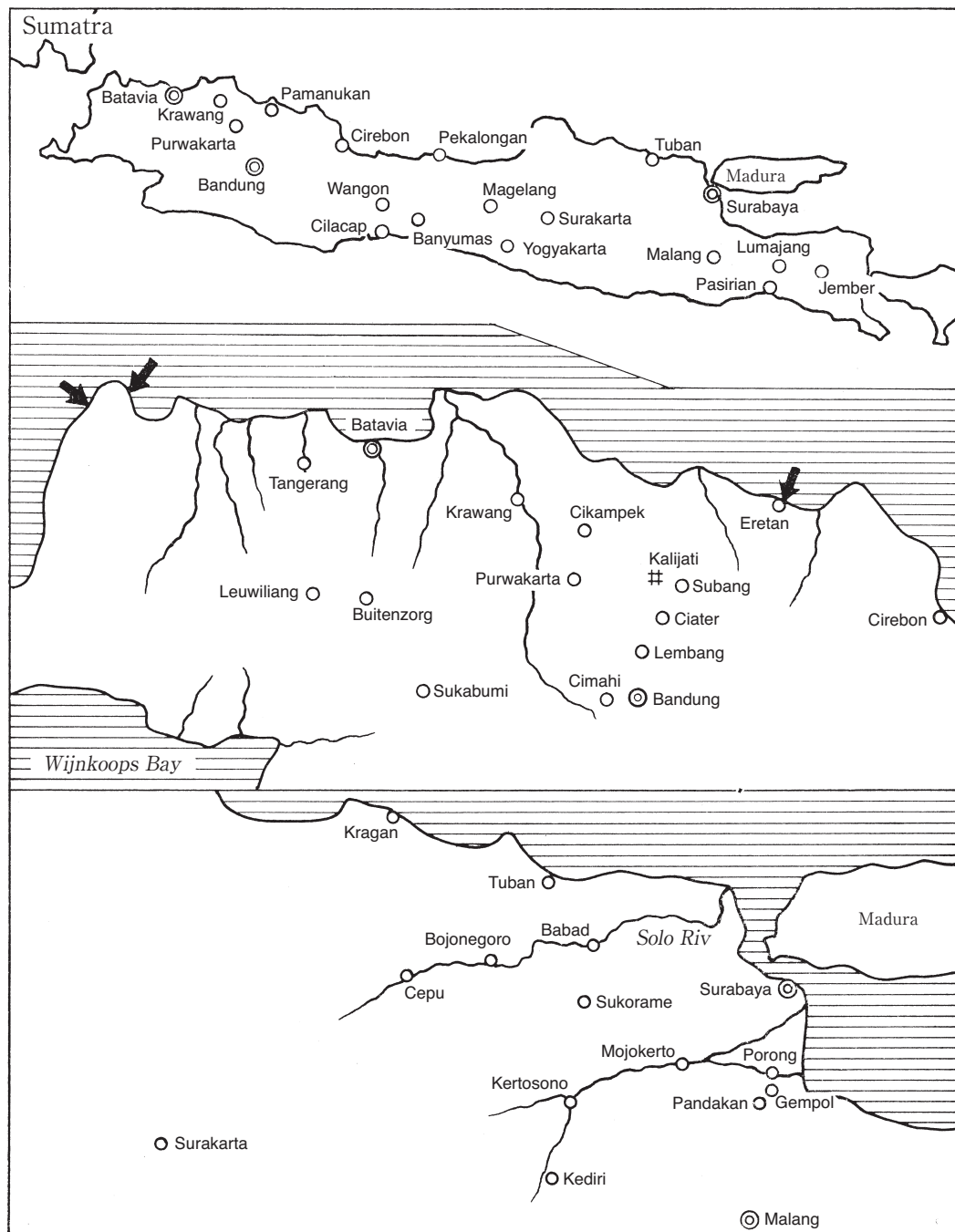


Illustration No. 70 — Locations Relevant to the Operations of the Allied Forces

Pasirian from the Porong area. After hearing the surrender broadcast from Bandung, Major General Ilgen also offered his surrender.⁽⁵⁰⁾

The Black Clandestine Broadcasts by the Southern Army

One of the causes that swiftly brought the Java [invasion] operation to a conclusion was [Japanese] black clandestine broadcasting aimed at Java. According to the "Report on the Progress of Black Clandestine Broadcasts toward Java" of the headquarters of the Southern Army and the recollections by Captain Tarōra Sadao, the black clandestine broadcasts were conducted in the following way:

Decision to Broadcast

At the beginning of February 1942, a large number of NHK [Japan Broadcasting Corporation] broadcasters and press reporters had assembled at Staff Section 2 of the headquarters of the Southern Army (at Saigon) to prepare for the reopening of broadcasting stations after the seizure of the stations at Singapore, Rangoon, Bandung, etc. When the work of the intelligence staff calmed down after the fall of Singapore on 15 February, the reporters of the various news agencies working at the Publicity Department as well as at Section 2, the representatives dispatched from the Ministry of Foreign Affairs, and the intelligence officers made a joint study at Section 2 with Captain Tarōra Sadao as the central figure. They drew up a plan to deliver black clandestine broadcasts toward Java in close coordination with the Java invasion operation of the Sixteenth Army in order to quickly conclude the Java [invasion] operation as well as to prevent scorched-earth tactics from happening in Java. Their plan received the approval of Commander in Chief Terauchi.

The Broadcasting Situation in Java

In Java, the Dutch East Indies had so far set up large broadcasting stations operating with a power of one to ten kilowatts in Surabaya, Bandung, Tanjung Priok [and other cities] to cover every region, and about twenty-eight smaller broadcasting stations in each region for broadcasts within the provinces and local regions; each [station] transmitted broadcasts to individual antennas. It seemed that in order to strengthen the air defense and to intensify propaganda and guidance by radio after the outbreak of the Greater East Asia War, the broadcasting stations had been brought under government control with the Bandung broadcasting station acting as the center, while the broadcasts from the Tanjung Priok station were essentially suspended. Programs were broadcast from the station at Bandung with 1.5 kilowatts of power on three frequencies, 15,310, 11,000 and 10,260 kilocycles, and the station called itself Batavia Station or Bandung Station as the occasion demanded.

At that time, in view of the past example when clever German use of black clandestine radio [broadcasts] had led the Netherlands and Poland to make numerous mistakes, the Dutch East Indies were extremely on guard against radio waves of dubious origin. As a defense against such broadcasts, apart from implementing various technical measures, it did not shut down the emission of radio signals after the sign-off. Furthermore, following the examples of other countries, it particularly attached importance to domestic propaganda radio programs. Not to mention public notices or announcements of the government or the army authorities, it communicated at times [even] orders and official notices such as mobilization and assembly orders, or orders for subordinate units, using common language, abbreviations and secret language. As a matter of course, control and censorship of the news were strictly implemented.

The Situation at the Saigon Broadcasting Station

The broadcasting station of Saigon available to the Southern Army had [the equipment, which could broadcast] with 12 kilowatts of power on the frequency of 10,240 and 6,180 kilocycles, and with 3 kilowatts of power on the frequency of 10,150 kilocycles. The Southern Army provided and also censored the news broadcast in Dutch and Malay by French Indochina on the frequency of 10,240 kilocycles. However, the army kept itself in the background and just let French Indochina put these programs on the air. As a result, the addresses from Saigon to the Dutch East Indies remained very passive.

Preparations for Broadcasting by the Southern Army

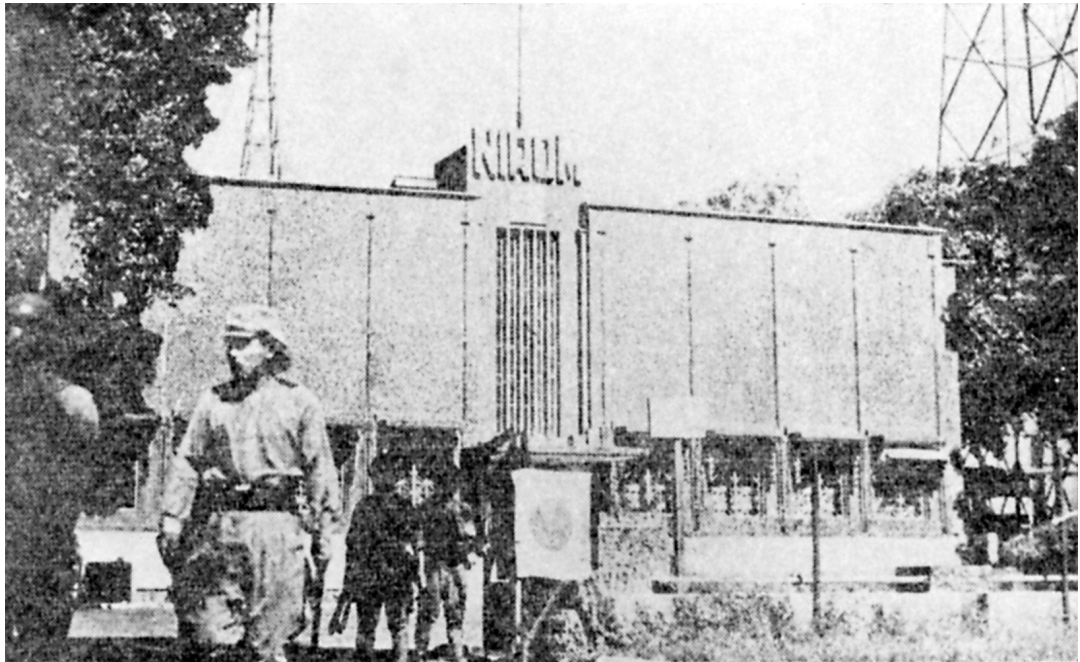
In order not to expose the [Japanese] intentions, the Southern Army planned to transmit, during the Java invasion operation and in close coordination with the operations, the necessary deceptive broadcasts from the Saigon broadcasting station by using the name of the Dutch East Indies authorities and switching the original signal sent with 12 kilowatt of power on the frequency of 10,240 kilocycles to a signal on the frequency of 10,260 kilocycles on the same wavelength as the broadcasting station of Bandung, hoping that it would lead the Dutch East Indies Army to make the wrong judgments about the [Japanese Army's] intentions and its strength. [The Southern Army] also planned to swiftly obtain a full surrender through the demoralization of the Dutch East Indies by stressing the irresponsible attitude of the United States and Britain regarding the defense of Java, and started its preparations for the black clandestine broadcasts.

The use of the broadcasting station at Saigon, the frequency changes, and its long-term overall use in particular, were considered quite difficult because of the complexity of the international relationship between Japan and France. However, after the official submission of the request to the government of French Indochina on 23 February and all sorts of negotiations, the [Japanese] request was accepted. The Southern Army provided the Saigon Broadcasting Station with crystals with a frequency of 10,260 kilocycles and adjusted [the equipment] so as to be able to timely switch [its frequency] from 10,240 kilocycles [to 10,260 kilocycles].

In order to conduct the black clandestine broadcasts, the Southern Army organized a special broadcasting detail in the following way:

Organization of the Special Broadcasting Detail

General supervisor:	1 company officer
Editing staff:	1 company officer and 2 army-drafted personnel
Translators (including broadcasters):	1 embassy vice-consul (Dutch language), 1 officer cadet (Dutch language), 4 army-drafted personnel (1 for the Malay and 3 for the Dutch language), 2 Malays, 1 Indonesian and 1 Dutchman
Technicians (including monitor staff):	5 army-drafted personnel (interception [of broadcasts] in the Dutch language only)
External relations staff:	1 company officer and 2 army-drafted personnel
In total:	18
[Editor's note: The numbers do not add up, unless the foreign nationals are not included.]	



The NIROM Broadcasting Station in Bandung

From 25 to 28 February, the Special Broadcasting Detail intercepted broadcasts by the NIROM [Nederlandsch-Indische Radio Omroep Maatschappij: Dutch East Indies Radio Broadcasting Corporation] (at Bandung) and monitored the signals night and day. With the broadcasts of the Saigon station still on the air as usual so as to conceal its intentions, the detail monitored the NIROM signal around the clock day after day, trying to find out agitation on the Dutch East Indies side during the day, and carefully seeking the moment when transmissions would be suspended at night. The Dutch East Indies side did not suspend the emission of the signal all night but transmitted instead the sound of a bell every fifteen seconds, as if they were on guard against sham broadcasts.

Broadcasting

On 27 February, the Special Broadcasting Detail had finished its preparations.

On 27 and 28 February, the Dutch East Indies broadcasts were as confident as ever, with no admission of anything out of the ordinary.

At 0000 on 1 March (the day of the landing of the Sixteenth Army), with the sudden [broadcast of] an air-raid alarm siren, the tumult in Java was on the air, and lasted for about two hours. At 0630, the signal of the Dutch East Indies broadcasting station, which [normally] was never suspended all day long, was interrupted. [The Special Broadcasting Detail] monitored the situation of the Dutch East Indies station for a while and prepared itself to start its black clandestine broadcast at 0800, when the Dutch East Indies station resumed its transmission at 0805. However, it only briefly reported the landing of the Japanese Army on the north coast of Java, and then as usual it only leisurely broadcast news from overseas as well as music until the end of the program of that day.

At 0730 on 2 March, the signal of the Dutch East Indies was [again] interrupted as on the day before. Without missing an opportunity, the Special Broadcasting Detail immediately started putting Dutch music on the air from the Saigon station at the frequency of 10,260 kilocycles, modulated the signal, and was about to switch to the real broadcast, when at 0800 the Dutch East Indies station again resumed its broadcast. The Special Broadcasting Detail had no choice but to abort its transmission and decided to wait until the morning of the 3d. Originally, the start of the black clandestine broadcasts was planned in such a way that simultaneously with the start of the landings of the Sixteenth Army in Java the Endō 3d Air Division would destroy the Bandung broadcasting station. As soon as the station had gone off the air, the Special Broadcasting Detail would assume the identity of the Bandung broadcasting station at the right moment and start broadcasting from the Saigon broadcasting station with the message: "A short while ago, our broadcast from the Bandung broadcasting station was interrupted due to a bombardment, but as the damage has been fixed, we are resuming our broadcast." However, judging from the condition of the air defense facilities of the Bandung broadcasting station, the chances of success of a bombing raid by the 3d Air Division were deemed small. Therefore, it was decided to start the black clandestine broadcasts from 3 March onwards, regardless of the situation of the signal of the Dutch East Indies broadcasting station, and get hold of the listeners through technical manipulation.

From 0730 on 3 March onwards, the Special Broadcasting Detail began its black clandestine broadcasts as scheduled from the Saigon broadcasting station, using the name of the Bandung broadcasting station. That is to say, the detail aired a black clandestine broadcast for about thirty minutes from 0730, before the morning newscast of the NIROM, and another black clandestine broadcast in Dutch and Malay after the evening newscast of the NIROM was over. The main topics of the broadcasts were as follows:

1. The Japanese army has been reinforced. Its troop strength already runs to 100,000 men and the Dutch East Indies Army is caught in a desperate battle. Reinforcements from Britain, the United States and Australia have not arrived yet.
2. Due to the powerful and swift advance of the Japanese troops and the half-hearted attitude of the British, U.S. and Australian forces, the Dutch East Indies forces are caught in a lost battle that is beyond control.
3. Large forces of the Japanese army are rapidly advancing. The destiny of Java is likely to be decided within a few days. A responsible authority said: "The defense of Java was not as important to the Allies as that of Australia."
4. Large formations of Japanese air units once again carried out fierce airstrikes on Port Moresby and Port Darwin.
5. The failure of the [allied] operation on Java has shaken Churchill's position.
6. The U.S.-Filipino Army on the Bataan Peninsula is running short of provisions and is facing a most difficult condition.
7. The Japanese troops in Burma have been reinforced. They stormed Rangoon, which left the British Indian Army no choice but to give up the city.
8. German submarines are intensively active off the coast of the Atlantic Ocean.
9. Those who are in possession of motor vehicles or motor bicycles and live in or around Bandung are required to assemble immediately. Those who have been called up for service and have been requested to present themselves at the Navy Department in Surabaya today do not need to be enlisted [anymore].

10. The Japanese troops, which landed at the bay of Indramayu, are now approaching a point thirty kilometers north of Bandung.
11. According to stories of eyewitnesses to the horrors of war, the Japanese army has meted out severe punishments to those who engaged in scorched-earth tactics.

That day (3 March), was the day when the Nasu Detachment advanced to the front of the Leuwiliang position and large-scale counterattacks from all sides were launched against the Shōji Detachment. The reactions to and the success of the aforementioned broadcasts, however, were observed as follows:

1. At the beginning of the [Japanese] landings on the island of Java, radio communications in all countries hardly mentioned the Japanese troop strength that had landed on the island. However, from 5 March onwards, such articles as “the strength of the Japanese army that has landed on Java is estimated at 70,000 to 100,000 troops,” started to be seen in Arip [the semiofficial French Indochinese news agency] and other media, after which the Dutch East Indies came to overestimate the Japanese troop strength.
2. [The topics on] the airstrikes on Australia and New Guinea were broadcast roughly one day later.
3. The coverage of the instability of Churchill’s cabinet started to appear in succession in overseas news from around 5 to 6 March. On 6 March, the [Japanese] Dōmei News Agency even started reporting as news from Washington that “Howard [Stafford?] Cripps is the successor.” It was observed that this news might to a certain degree have been derived from the black clandestine broadcast.

The Bandung broadcast on that day (3 March) was as usual; it only briefly touched on the war situation on the island, with no admission of anything out of the ordinary.

The next day, 4 March, was the day when the Nasu Detachment attacked the Leuwiliang position all day, the Wakamatsu Battalion of the Shōji Detachment returned to Kalijati after seizing Purwakarta to the west in the morning, and the Egashira Battalion advanced to the bridge over the Citarum River. On that day, the Special Broadcasting Detail delivered black clandestine broadcasts for about thirty minutes three times in the morning and [again] three times in the afternoon in Dutch and Malay from the Saigon broadcasting station, calling itself the Bandung broadcasting station. The broadcast topics were in outline as follows:

1. Japanese air forces bombed Sydney as well as key locations on Java, yesterday 3 March.
2. Due to a shortage of troops and the irresponsible retreat of U.S., British and Australian forces, the Dutch East Indies Army has been forced into an overall retreat. We, the people of the Dutch East Indies should have second thoughts about the position of the Dutch East Indies.
3. Prime Minister Churchill and President Roosevelt have promised specific support to Australia in a joint statement.
4. General Wavell has fled to India.
5. The Dutch East Indies government and army will put off the implementation of matters they have already publicly announced.
6. The people of the Dutch East Indies must stop destroying basic facilities for daily life and calmly wait and see.
7. The information the government had provided the people with was incorrect. The Japanese army is powerful but has a warm heart.
8. Under fierce attacks from the air as well as by land, Bandung is on the verge of a crisis.

9. Van Mook has raised strong protests against Britain and the United States.
10. U.S. government circles are giving a sharp retort to the slander on Lieutenant General MacArthur in a London broadcast.
11. A large Japanese army unit has crossed the Sittang River, which is putting pressure on Britain to provide support for Burma.
12. The Japanese air power deserves close attention and the United States is going all out to investigate the true state of things.
13. The Dutch people in the home country under German occupation are worried whether the Dutch East Indies will adopt destruction tactics for Java.
14. The island of Java is about to be split into three by the Japanese army. All residents must give up their dependence on other countries.

On that day (the 4th), the Dutch East Indies broadcasting station aired its programs as usual. The war situation in Java was only briefly broadcast, with no admission of anything out of the ordinary. Nevertheless, the [black clandestine] broadcast on that day was considered to have had the following effect:

1. It seemed that the [Japanese] broadcast, which had hinted at the shortage of strength of the Dutch East Indies Army, especially the news that the Japanese troops were being continuously reinforced, had caused considerable anxiety on the Dutch East Indies side. On the night of the 5th, the NIROM station broadcast that: "The Japanese troops are more numerous than ours and we are at a disadvantage in every aspect." The NIROM station repeated a similar broadcast on the 8th.
2. Apart from broadcasting the general war situation, the fact that [the Japanese clandestine broadcast] clearly mentioned the seized locations in particular apparently had a great effect on attracting people to the black clandestine broadcasts. As a result, from the 5th onwards, the NIROM station all of a sudden changed its former attitude of providing only brief and abstract reports; moreover the contents of its releases became pessimistic.

The next day, 5 March, was the day when the Nasu Detachment seized the Leuwiliang position in the morning and advanced to the front of Buitenzorg in the evening, the Satō Detachment entered Batavia at night, and the Shōji Detachment moved southward from Subang and seized the pillbox positions at Ciater in the evening. On that day, the Special Broadcasting Detail, as on the preceding day, delivered its broadcasts [this time] for about one hour once in the morning and [again] three times in the afternoon in Dutch and Malay from the Saigon broadcasting station, calling itself the Bandung broadcasting station. The contents of the broadcasts were as follows:

1. The Japanese Army has again landed large units on the north coast of Java as well as on several locations on the south coast.
2. Van Mook is reproaching Britain and the United States.
3. In order to arrest persons engaging in scorched-earth tactics, the Japanese Army is using fifth column units.
4. On 3 March, the Japanese Army carried out an intensive bombardment on Sydney and key locations in the periphery of Java.
5. People must stop destroying basic facilities for daily life and calmly wait and see.
6. Bandung is facing a total crisis due to fierce attacks by the Japanese air force.

7. A large Japanese army unit has crossed the Sittang River, which is putting pressure on the British Armed Forces to provide support for Burma.
8. The United States is paying close attention to the Japanese air power and is going all out to investigate the true state of things.
9. The Dutch people in the home country under German occupation are worried whether the people in Java will carry out scorched-earth tactics.
10. The island of Java is about to be split into three by the Japanese army. All residents must give up their dependence on the United States, Britain and Australia.
11. The garrison of Batavia has offered a cease-fire to the Japanese.
12. General Wavell, who has returned to India, said that he had gained a new appreciation of the Japanese forces and stressed the necessity of intensive training for his own troops.
13. The British House of Commons is debating the issue of a shortage of troops as well as of labor in Australia.
14. The whole north coast and west coast of Australia is frightened by the Japanese air strikes.
15. The lines of communication of our army have been cut off. People must not engage in hasty acts of destruction.
16. Van Mook's protests against Britain and the United States are creating a great sensation among the allied nations.
17. The residents in the areas along Bantam Bay occupied by the Japanese army are living a normal life.
18. The Japanese Army is using fifth column [units] to arrest saboteurs.
19. At an Allied War Council, the Australian representative requested reinforcements from Britain and the United States.
20. The Japanese Army landed at Wijnkoopsbaai as well as east of Probolinggo on the 5th.
21. All listeners are asked to beware of false rumors [spread by] news from unidentified broadcasting stations.
22. Honolulu, which has been shaking from massive explosions of an unknown origin, came under a large Japanese airstrike on the 5th.
23. Germany made a mocking remark about the removal of General Wavell and the Dutch people in the home country are delighted about it.

The Bandung broadcasting station maintained its broadcasts in the same manner as it had on the previous day until the evening of that day (the 5th). However, all of a sudden at 2015, the station started to show its reaction to [the Japanese] broadcasts. That is to say, the Bandung station started with a public announcement warning that "in order to obstruct our military leadership, the enemy (Japan) is sending clandestine broadcasts from a certain broadcasting station. Listeners must mark the difference by the voice of the announcers and not be swayed by these [fake broadcasts]." Then, the station aired all at once all the discouraging topics that had been concealed so far: such as the situation of defeat in Java, the anxiety in political circles, the conflict between Britain and the United States over the failure to defend Java, the protest by the Dutch East Indies authorities to Britain and the United States, the search for who was to blame for the defeat, etc. After that, the Dutch East Indies side lost control over its propaganda and the station began to give reactions that were induced by the Japanese broadcasts. It seemed that the propaganda policy of the Dutch East Indies had basically collapsed. Particularly, when the [Japanese] Special Broadcasting Detail aired on that day that "Van Mook has raised a fierce protest against Britain and the United States about General Wavell's retreat to India," the Dutch East Indies side, as if making some kind of excuse, broadcast several times on the 6th as well as on the 7th, a recording of Van Mook's ad-

dress at the People's Council of 5 March, which was very unfavorable for the Dutch East Indies. It provided the Japanese with materials to decide on conducting a broadcast to advise the Dutch East Indies to surrender.

The main results gained in the response to the broadcast on that day (5 March) were in outline as follows:

1. Alarmed at the news of "further landings of large units of the Japanese Army" in the [Japanese] clandestine broadcasts, the Dutch East Indies side believed it and aired a report at 2300 on 6 March from the NIROM station that "the Japanese Army is conducting further landings at Tegal, Cilacap, Probolinggo and the island of Madura."

[The fact was that] the Japanese Army had conducted no landings at all at the aforementioned locations. However, the broadcast of the Special Broadcasting Detail deceived the broadcasting station of the Dutch East Indies, which in turn misled the Dutch East Indies Army, and eventually IGHQ and the Sakaguchi Detachment were [also] misled.

The chief of the Special Broadcasting Detail, Captain Tarōra, recollected it as follows:

After the completion of the operation, survey squads were immediately dispatched to the field. In all the areas where we conducted on-site surveys, the people as well as officials were obeying the instructions from Saigon and had no doubts whatsoever even after the surrender. The chief of operations of the Dutch East Indies Army headquarters stated: "As information on [further] landings [of the Japanese] in Cilacap was repeatedly received, I sent one of our two heavy artillery batteries that had been kept in reserve down south, but up to now I still have my doubts about the source of this information." It was only much later, when the staff officers involved presented themselves at IGHQ, and were asked, "Who had ordered the landing in Cilacap," and answered, "That was just a fabrication," that [IGHQ] saw the funny side of it.

Staff Officer Yano of the Sakaguchi Detachment recalled it as follows:

As we had information that "Japanese forces are landing in Cilacap and vicinity," we had no doubt that the Navy was trying to distinguish itself by stealing a march on us, and we furiously charged toward Cilacap.

2. The aforementioned broadcast of "further landings of the Japanese Army" by the NIROM also reached countries abroad at face value, and a broadcast in San Francisco aired [a report of] "further landings of 50,000 Japanese reinforcements" on the 6th.
3. Against the black clandestine broadcast of the Special Broadcasting Detail that "Van Mook has raised protests against Britain and the United States," the NIROM aired a recording of Van Mook's address at the People's Council on the previous day. The recorded speech contained the following passage: "If the Dutch East Indies had not participated in the war, we would now be like Thailand and French Indochina." These words were carefully scrutinized for possible hidden meanings. But then again, the recorded speech was interpreted as nothing but an excuse to the people. This speech became valuable material in the decision to broadcast an advice to surrender.
4. It was observed that topic No. 3 (the use of fifth column units to arrest those who engaged in scorched-earth tactics) and No. 5 (stop the destruction and calmly wait and see) of [the Japanese] broadcast caused considerable confusion at the Dutch East Indies side. The Dutch East Indies announced through the NIROM broadcast that, "a specially-formed military police shall be created to control groundless rumors." We then followed this up in a clandestine broadcast by saying that "People must beware of fake police authorities, as they are everywhere."
5. Struggling with the fact that the Japanese clandestine broadcasts were widely listened to by the people in Java, the NIROM at 2015 on 5 March repeatedly transmitted instructions to "listen to the voice of the announcers to tell the difference and avoid being deceived by these fake broadcasts." [Against this,] the Special Broadcasting Detail aired that "You will know which news

tells the truth if you compare the news and the facts," by which the detail seized upon the NIROM's weakness that it had until now not dealt so much with domestic news. From then on, the NIROM suddenly started covering domestic news or the attitudes of Britain or the United States, and the content of the broadcasts reflected gloomier views.

6. Beginning with the flight of General Wavell, a number of broadcasts aired on that day with the intention of alienating the Dutch East Indies from Britain and the United States reached overseas countries, and [the report] that "not only Britain but also the United States have come to abandon the Dutch East Indies" started to appear in the news worldwide.

The next day, 6 March, was the day when the Nasu Detachment seized Buitenzorg in the morning, the Sixteenth Army again submitted a request for the air lift [of troops from Palembang] to support the Shōji Detachment, and the latter detachment repulsed the counterattack of the enemy in the morning and seized one vital area of the positions across the mountain ridge in the evening. That night, the Dutch East Indies decided to make the Lembang position its main position, and [also] made up its mind to surrender Bandung should this position be taken.

On that day (the 6th), the Special Broadcasting Detail broadcast once in the morning (for about one hour) and three times in the afternoon (for about two and a half hours [in total]) in Dutch and Malay. A noteworthy [feature] of the broadcast on that day was that the detail had started airing broadcasts with the advice to surrender. Having heard the recorded speech of Van Mook, which the NIROM had broadcasted that morning, the Southern Army judged that the Dutch East Indies was considering surrender. At 1930 and again at 2145 on that day, the detail broadcast Commander in Chief Terauchi's message advising surrender on the wavelength used in French Indochina, while in close coordination with this, putting the black clandestine broadcast on the air on the wavelength used in the Dutch East Indies. The broadcast emphasized Britain's and the United States' abandonment of the Dutch East Indies, the situation of the Dutch East Indies Army losing the war, the crisis in the Churchill administration, the people's yearning for peace, the opinions [exchanged] between the [Dutch East Indies] army and government concerning surrender, the dispute between Britain and the United States on the failure of defending Java, etc.

The main topics that the Special Broadcasting Detail broadcast on that day (6 March) were in outline as follows:

1. The advance of the Japanese Army in Burma is furious; it caused the abandonment of Rangoon. Chiang Kai-Shek's troops are withdrawing to the north.
2. The garrison in Batavia has surrendered. Its citizens are fully protected by the Japanese Army.
3. The total defeat in Java made Prime Minister Churchill decide on the resignation of his cabinet en masse.
4. The people [in Java] must remain calm and composed like the citizens of Batavia. They must not vainly provoke the Japanese Army.
5. Prime Minister Churchill declared brazenly that he bore no responsibility for the [failed] defense of Java.
6. People must beware of fake police authorities, as they are everywhere.
7. A Dutch East Indies tank unit that was heading to attack the Kalijati airfield has not been heard of.
8. The Japanese air force has bombed Australia and the [Lesser] Sunda Islands.
9. The leader of a U.S. mission to India has been chosen.

10. Our units are fiercely engaging with a powerful mechanized unit of the enemy (Japanese Army) in Lembang and vicinity.
11. The home country of the Netherlands is delighted about the broadcast of [the address of] Van Mook, who has come to his senses concerning Britain and the United States.
12. In order to maintain public peace and order, people in the areas occupied by the Japanese Army must obey the army's orders.
13. The Japanese Army is passing through Surakarta and Yogyakarta from the morning of the 6th onwards.

The next day, 7 March, was the day when [Siteenth] Army Commander Imamura advanced from Serang to Batavia, the Shōji Detachment left the mountain ridge line in the afternoon to advance into the Lembang sector in the evening.

On that day (the 7th), the Special Broadcasting Detail [again] broadcast once in the morning (for about one hour) and three times in the afternoon (for about two and a half hours [in total]) in Dutch and Malay. Furthermore, at 1930 and again at 2145 as it had done on the previous day, the detail broadcast the message of the commander in chief [of the Southern Army] advising surrender (note: four times in total since the previous day). On that day, the signal of the NIROM went all the time on and off again from around 1300 onwards, and went completely silent at last by 2220. The main topics of the [Japanese] clandestine broadcasts aired on that day were as follows:

1. The Dutch East Indies Army is caught in an uphill battle accross [the island]. The government is likely to decide on surrender so as not to make the same mistake as Poland and Belgium. Everyone must according to his own judgment appropriately deal with the Japanese Army's advice to surrender.
2. The rapid attack by the Japanese Army has already decided the outcome. The present result came from the irresponsible retreat of the U.S., British and Australian forces. In order to bring an end to this disadvantageous battle, the government is initiating every possible form of negotiations with Japan.
3. The government and the top-level officers of the army will hold an important meeting today on the 7th concerning the Japanese Army's advice to surrender.
4. The Japanese Fleet has made its appearance in the Indian Ocean.
5. Bennett is urging the people to be ready, saying that it is only a matter of weeks before a Japanese attack on Australia takes place.
6. The Australian government officially announced that men would be made to perform military duty or serve in the military industry.
7. The Japanese forces have carried out the sixth and the seventh bombardments of Port Moresby.
8. There are people who do not observe the suspension of scorched-earth tactics. Close watch is required.
9. Signs of lack of military discipline are seen in all areas. All commanders must take the necessary steps.
10. Fierce engagements are occurring on the highlands in the vicinity of Bandung.
11. Although Bandung's fate is being sealed, the citizens must remain calm. They must not leave their post.
12. Japanese reinforcement units are under sail to Java.
13. The Japanese Army stormed into a corner of Rangoon on the afternoon of the 7th.
14. Labor disputes in the United States are causing casualties.

The reactions of the Dutch East Indies side on that day (the 7th) were as follows:

1. Concerning the aforementioned topic No. 1 of the [Japanese] clandestine broadcast (i.e. Everyone must according to his own judgment appropriately deal with the Japanese Army's advice to surrender), the NIROM in no time aired as an official notice, "the special military police can be recognized by a white scarf around their necks. You must be careful; they are not soldiers who have surrendered."
2. At 2220 at night, the NIROM fell completely silent.
3. At 2330 at night, a military envoy of the Bandung garrison army commander came to the Shōji Detachment to offer a local cease-fire.

The next day, 8 March, was the day when Governor-General Tjarda [van Starckenborgh Stachouwer] and the chief of the Dutch East Indies Army Department, Ter Poorten, came to Kalijati in the afternoon for the meeting with [Sixteenth] Army Commander Imamura.

It was not until the morning of that day (the 8th) that the Special Broadcasting Detail in Saigon learned that "on the previous night, the Bandung garrison army commander offered a local cease-fire to the Shōji Detachment."

When the Special Broadcasting Detail received this news, it did not let the opportunity slip to steer this toward a total surrender and aired instructions and announcements directed to the entire Dutch East Indies Army, all the administrative officials, and the people at large on the assumption of the absolute superiority of the Japanese Army and pretending as if an agreement for a total surrender was being concluded in Bandung. In this way, it tried to bring about a feeling of defeat on the Dutch East Indies side and put the Sixteenth Army in an advantageous position in the negotiations. Then, as soon as it learned that the Dutch East Indies Governor-General and his party would arrive in Kalijati at 1550, the Special Broadcasting Detail figured that the total surrender of the Dutch East Indies had become a foregone conclusion. After that, the detail only aired discreet broadcasts using news from overseas so as not to hamper this process, while preparing to close down the clandestine broadcasts.

On that day (the 8th), the Special Broadcasting Detail successively broadcasted in Dutch and Malay from 0730 to 1800, except for the hours when the Saigon station aired its news programs. Further, the detail decided to remain on the air for forty-eight consecutive hours from 1935, successively broadcasting in Dutch and Malay. The number of broadcasts on this day [the 8th] amounted to nine Dutch and Malay broadcasts each in the morning as well as in the afternoon. The main topics the Special Broadcast Squad aired on that day as clandestine broadcasts were in outline as follows:

1. The Japanese Army has entered Bandung.
2. [The Dutch East Indies] offered a cease-fire to the Japanese Army and is negotiating about the particulars.
3. All the people [on Java] must follow the proclamation of the supreme commander [of the Dutch East Indies army], and refrain from taking reckless, rash actions.
4. The Dutch East Indies Army has done its utter best, but due to the betrayal of the United States, Britain and Australia, it had no choice but to make the ultimate decision and accept the message of the Japanese Army Commander sent on the radio advising a cease-fire.
5. The Japanese Army accepted our offer of a cease-fire. At present, talks with the Japanese Army are being held at the Isola Hotel in Bandung.
6. The reports of a Dutch East Indies cease-fire have caused emotional conflict between the British government and the Dutch government in exile.

7. Britain is much concerned about a sudden increase of pressure of the Japanese Army on Australia and Burma as a consequence of the cease-fire with the Dutch East Indies Army, and is asking the United States for support.
8. Port Darwin was again bombed by the Japanese air force on the 7th.
9. It seems that Prime Minister [Luang] Pibulsonggram will be nominated to head the incoming cabinet of Thailand.
10. As a result of the negotiations with the Japanese Army, the Dutch East Indies Army has decided to suspend all hostilities.
11. The Japanese Army completely captured Rangoon on the morning of the 8th.
12. Reports on the cease-fire of the Dutch East Indies Army and the fall of Rangoon have greatly upset the Australian government.
13. On the 8th, the government of the Dutch East Indies decided to surrender to the Japanese Army. Each administrative official must follow the instructions given by the Japanese Army. Particulars will be given as soon as they have been decided upon.
14. The Army as well as the government have decided to completely surrender to the Japanese Army. All forces must surrender. Public officials and civilians alike must exert themselves to maintain public order, following the instructions of the Japanese Army.

The next day, 9 March, was the day when the Dutch East Indies broadcast its unconditional surrender in the afternoon. On that day, the Special Broadcasting Detail in Saigon started its broadcast at 0730, aired the clandestine broadcasts in Dutch and Malay until 1805, except for the hours when the Saigon station aired its news programs. The broadcasts on that day were aired twice in the morning and three times in the afternoon both in Dutch and Malay. The topics aired on that day were in outline as follows:

1. The Dutch East Indies government is still holding talks with the Japanese Army at Kalijati. Its army, government officials and civilians must trust in the chivalrous (*Bushido*) spirit of the Japanese Army.
2. Australia is intensifying its guard. The Japanese air force is [still] actively operating in the South Pacific, even after the offer of a cease-fire by the Dutch East Indies.
3. The war situation in Burma has developed and General Wavell is in the middle of negotiations with Chiang Kai-shek's army.
4. Peace has returned to the city of Batavia. The Japanese Army has established a military administration over the city.

As the Dutch East Indies officially accepted a total and unconditional surrender at 1500 on that day and announced a joint statement by the Dutch East Indies government and the Dutch East Indies Army regarding their total surrender from the Bandung station [starting] from 2030, the Southern Army (i.e. the Special Broadcasting Detail) immediately stopped its clandestine broadcasts.

The Shift to the Military Administration

The main characteristic of the Java operation was that the inhabitants welcomed [the Japanese troops] with cheers and wholeheartedly actively cooperated. There was no need to watch out for [hostile] indigenous people wherever on the island of Java [the Japanese troops] went during the operation.⁽³⁶⁾

[Sixteenth] Army Commander Imamura, who made his entry into Batavia at 1500 on 7 March, simultaneously proclaimed Military Government Decree No. 1, installed the Military Administration Department, [consisting of] Vice Chief of Staff Major General Harada and his men, in Batavia, and immediately set them to work. Article 1 of the aforementioned Military Government Decree No. 1 read as follows:⁽¹³⁾

Article 1. With the intention of promoting the welfare of the people of the East Indies, with whom we share a common ancestry, and determined to ensure [a state of] coexistence and co-prosperity with the local population based on the principle of a joint defense of Greater East Asia, the Imperial Japanese Army shall for the present implement a military administration in the area of the East Indies in order to establish peace and order within the East Indies and swiftly let the people live and work in peace and quiet.

[Changes in] the Disposition of the Units

On the day when the Dutch East Indies Army surrendered (9 March), the Southern Army passed down orders in which it designated the entire island of Sumatra as the operational area of the Twenty-fifth Army from 12 March onwards and ordered the units currently present in the area to be transferred to that army as of that date.⁽²³⁾ It was anticipated that the Shōji Detachment would return to the 38th Division operating in Sumatra, to which it had [originally] belonged. Also, as previously decided, the Sakaguchi Detachment would return to the 56th Division [currently] in Burma, to which it had [originally] belonged. [Apart from these,] special consideration was needed for the two principalities on Java, Surakarta and Yogyakarta.

Taking these factors into account, on 10 March, the Sixteenth Army made the following disposition of its units and passed down orders for the mopping up of remnants of the enemy, the maintenance of public order, and the requisitioning as well as the securing of all facilities and resources.⁽⁸⁸⁾

[Sixteenth] Army headquarters: Batavia

Shōji Detachment: Shall be stationed in Batavia, scheduled to be put under the direct control of the [Sixteenth] Army and be in charge of the maintenance of public order in the Batavia residency.

Sakaguchi Detachment: Shall assemble without delay in Batavia

2d Division: Shall take charge of western Java and the residencies of Pekalongan and Banyumas with headquarters in Bandung.

48th Division: Shall take charge of central Java, and eastern Java and Madura (with the exception of the principalities of Surakarta and Yogyakarta as well as the Pekalongan and the Banyumas residencies) with headquarters in Surabaya.

The two principalities of Surakarta and Yogyakarta shall be put under the direct control of the Army. For this purpose, the 2d Division and the 48th Division shall each send half a battalion of infantry as the core respectively to Yogyakarta and Surakarta by 15 March, and put these units under the direct control of the Sixteenth Army.